

The New Materialism

Alain Badiou and Slavoj Žižek have become two of the dominant voices in contemporary philosophy and critical theory. In this book, Geoff Pfeifer offers an in-depth look at their respective views. Using Louis Althusser's materialism as a starting point—which, as Pfeifer shows, was built partially as a response to the Marxism of the *Parti Communiste Français* and partially in dialogue with other philosophical movements and intellectual currents of its times—the book looks at the differing ways in which both Badiou's and Žižek's work attempt to respond to issues that arise within the Althusserian edifice. Pfeifer argues here that, ultimately, Žižek's materialism succeeds in responding to these issues in ways that Badiou's does not. In building this argument, Pfeifer engages not only with the work of Althusser, Badiou, and Žižek and their intellectual backgrounds, but also with much of the contemporary scholarship surrounding these thinkers. As such, Pfeifer's book is an important addition to the ongoing debates within contemporary critical theory.

Geoff Pfeifer is Assistant Teaching Professor of Philosophy at Worcester Polytechnic Institute.

Routledge Studies in Social and Political Thought

For a full list of titles in this series, please visit www.routledge.com

- 69 Hemingway on Politics and Rebellion**
*Edited by Lauretta Conklin
Frederking*
- 70 Social Theory in Contemporary Asia**
Ann Brooks
- 71 Governmentality**
Current Issues and Future Challenges
*Edited by Ulrich Bröckling,
Susanne Krasmann and Thomas
Lemke*
- 72 Gender, Emotions and Labour Markets—Asian and Western Perspectives**
*Ann Brooks and Theresa
Devasahayam*
- 73 Alienation and the Carnivalization of Society**
*Edited by Jerome Braun and
Lauren Langman*
- 74 The Post-Colonial State in the Era of Capitalist Globalization**
Historical, Political and Theoretical Approaches to State Formation
Tariq Amin-Khan
- 75 The Psychology and Politics of the Collective**
Groups, Crowds and Mass Identifications
Edited by Ruth Parkin-Gounelas
- 76 Environmental Solidarity**
How Religions Can Sustain Sustainability
Pablo Martínez de Anguita
- 77 Comedy and the Public Sphere**
The Rebirth of Theatre as Comedy and the Genealogy of the Modern Public Arena
Arpad Szakolczai
- 78 Culture, Class, and Critical Theory**
Between Bourdieu and the Frankfurt School
David Gartman
- 79 Environmental Apocalypse in Science and Art**
Designing Nightmares
Sergio Fava
- 80 Conspicuous and Inconspicuous Discriminations in Everyday Life**
Victor N. Shaw
- 81 Understanding the Tacit**
Stephen P. Turner
- 82 The Politics of Expertise**
Stephen P. Turner
- 83 Globalized Knowledge Flows and Chinese Social Theory**
Xiaoying Qi
- 84 Reconstructing Social Justice**
Lauretta Conklin Frederking

- 85 The Dialectics of Inquiry Across the Historical Social Sciences**
David Baronov
- 86 How Groups Matter**
Challenges of Toleration in Pluralistic Societies
Edited by Gideon Calder, Magali Bessone and Federico Zuolo
- 87 The Politics of Rationality**
Reason through Occidental History
Charles P. Webel
- 88 Gramsci, Materialism, and Philosophy**
Esteve Morera
- 89 Emotions and Social Change**
Historical and Sociological Perspectives
Edited by David Lemmings and Ann Brooks
- 90 John Rawls and the History of Political Thought**
The Rousseauvian and Hegelian Heritage of Justice as Fairness
Jeffrey Bercuson
- 91 What Holism Can Do for Social Theory**
Barbara Hanson
- 92 The Sociology of Knowledge in a Time of Crisis**
Challenging the Phantom of Liberty
Onofrio Romano
- 93 Cosmopolitanism and the Legacies of Dissent**
Tamara Caraus and Camil-Alexandru Parvu
- 94 The Metaphysics of Technology**
David Skrbina
- 95 The Political Thought of Hume and His Contemporaries: Enlightenment Projects Vol 1**
Frederick G. Whelan
- 96 The Political Thought of Hume and His Contemporaries: Enlightenment Projects Vol 2**
Frederick G. Whelan
- 97 Rosa Luxemburg In Action: For Revolution and Democracy**
Rosemary H. T. O'Kane
- 98 Innovation Contested: The Idea of Innovation Over the Centuries**
Benoît Godin
- 99 Phenomenology of Youth Cultures and Globalization**
Lifeworlds and Surplus Meaning in Changing Times
Edited by Stuart R. Poyntz and Jacqueline Kennelly
- 100 Hannah Arendt and the Limits Of Total Domination**
The Holocaust, Plurality, and Resistance
Michal Aharony
- 101 The History of Compulsory Voting in Europe**
Democracy's Duty?
Anthoula Malkopoulou
- 102 The New Materialism**
Althusser, Badiou, and Žižek
Geoff Pfeifer

P525
2015

The New Materialism

Althusser, Badiou, and Žižek

Geoff Pfeifer

 **Routledge**
Taylor & Francis Group
NEW YORK AND LONDON

高雄師大圖書館



0399767

First published 2015
by Routledge
711 Third Avenue, New York, NY 10017

and by Routledge
2 Park Square, Milton Park, Abingdon, Oxon OX14 4RN

*Routledge is an imprint of the Taylor & Francis Group,
an informa business*

© 2015 Taylor & Francis

The right of Geoff Pfeifer to be identified as author of this work has been asserted in accordance with sections 77 and 78 of the Copyright, Designs and Patents Act 1988.

All rights reserved. No part of this book may be reprinted or reproduced or utilized in any form or by any electronic, mechanical, or other means, now known or hereafter invented, including photocopying and recording, or in any information storage or retrieval system, without permission in writing from the publishers.

Trademark Notice: Product or corporate names may be trademarks or registered trademarks, and are used only for identification and explanation without intent to infringe.

Library of Congress Cataloging-in-Publication Data
Pfeifer, Geoff.

The new materialism : Althusser, Badiou, Žižek / Geoff Pfeifer. —
1st Edition.

pages cm. — (Routledge studies in social and political thought ; 102)

Includes bibliographical references and index.

1. Critical theory. 2. Materialism. 3. Philosophy, Modern—21st century. 4. Althusser, Louis, 1918–1990—Political and social views. 5. Badiou, Alain,—Political and social views. 6. Žižek, Slavoj—Political and social views. I. Title.

HM480.P44 2015

146'.3—dc23

2014039608

ISBN: 978-1-138-81208-6 (hbk)

ISBN: 978-1-315-74837-5 (ebk)

Typeset in Sabon
by Apex CoVantage, LLC

For Molly and Elan

Contents

<i>Acknowledgments</i>	xi
Introduction	1
1 Louis Althusser and the <i>Parti Communiste Français</i>	9
2 <i>En Media Res</i> : Althusser's Materialism, the Challenge to the PCF's Marxism, and the Rise of Anti-Humanism	26
3 Badiou's Materialist Project: Stasis and Change	52
4 Badiou as Structuralist, or the Idealism of Formalism	75
5 Žižek and the Materialism of the Immaterial, or Why Hegel Is Not an Idealist	93
6 Žižek Contra Badiou	114
Conclusion: New Materialism?	133
<i>Index</i>	139

Acknowledgments

This book had its beginnings in a dissertation that was written at the University of South Florida between 2009 and 2012. In light of this, I want to begin by thanking my dissertation chair Stephen Turner. Steve's friendship, encouragement, and guidance over the years has been not only incredibly helpful but also incredibly meaningful. I would also like to thank Adrian Johnston. Adrian's help and generosity during the early stages of the dissertation was invaluable and so were his many suggestions during the early stages of the process of converting the dissertation into a book. The other members of my dissertation committee, Ofelia Schutte, Charlie Guignon, and Michael Morris, also deserve my thanks for their suggestions and questions along the way. I also owe tremendous gratitude to those close friends and colleagues with whom I have spent many hours over the years discussing the ideas that made their way into this book and who also read and commented on much of the text that appears here at various stages of the process: West Gurley, William Koch, and Jose Haro. In addition to this far from complete list, I want to thank Agon Hamza, who has recently been unflinching in his support for my work as well as in his friendship and willingness to read my work and offer valuable suggestions and insights. Finally, I want to thank my family, Molly and Elan, to whom this book is dedicated; without their love and support this book would not have been possible; as well as my parents, Bonnie and Dennis, who taught me much about the world and have always been supportive of my intellectual pursuits.

Portions of some of the chapters that appear here have appeared previously or are about to appear in modified forms in other venues: "Žižek's Negative (Positive) Project, or Negativity as Positive Possibility," *Current Perspectives in Social Theory* Vol. 29 (October 2011); "Review of Adrian Johnston, *Badiou, Žižek, and Political Transformations: The Cadence of Change*," in *Human Studies* Vol. 33 issue 3 (2010) 359–364; and "Žižek as a Reader of Marx, Marx as a Reader of Žižek," in *Repeating Žižek*, edited by Agon Hamza, Duke University Press (forthcoming, 2015). I would like to thank the editors of each of these journals/volumes for their permission to reprint versions of these works here.

Introduction

The mode of production of material life conditions the social, political, and intellectual life process in general. It is not the consciousness of men that determines their being, but on the contrary, their social being that determines their consciousness.¹

These are, perhaps, some of the most famous words in all of Marx's writings. They are often invoked when one talks of Marxist materialism, and said to represent a concise encapsulation of what this doctrine is all about. The standard understanding of this is, of course, that Marx is setting himself in direct opposition to the Hegelian (idealist) understanding of history. History is, according to Hegel, a working out (and working through) of concepts—or ideas—and the process by which we as humans, collectively or as 'Spirit,' come to consciousness of their meaning. The term Spirit is Hegel's term of art for the shapes of social existence that exhibit themselves at a particular time. These shapes are constantly renewing and transforming themselves as history moves forward. Each particular shape of existing spirit gives birth to new shapes as things proceed, and each new shape is a further working out of the concept(s) embodied in the prior shape. We are, on Hegel's account, always embodied, and what we embody is precisely that particular shape of spirit that exists for us—alternatively we could say that spirit is embodied in us; there is nothing mystical in this, it just means that we (and spirit) are situated within a world that has particular ways of being that exhibit the particular (and limited) perspective on, and understanding of, a set of concepts that make up our communal understanding of ourselves and our world. In this way of understanding the Hegelian project, the movement of history is precisely this progressive working out of the concepts through which we grasp our existence toward their full transparency. Thus the 'matter' of history (i.e., human institutions, communities, events, and the like) are the material embodiment of this conceptual awareness at any given time and are part of the ongoing work of a concept's coming-to-be in its full richness and actuality. On this reading of Hegel's thought, it is the opposite of Marx's claims: it is the consciousness of humans that 'determines their mode of existence.' For

2 Introduction

example, a given historical society's economic practices, codes of law and property, as well as cultural practices might exhibit and be determined by that society's understanding of the concepts of 'freedom.'² So according to this understanding of Hegel, 'Spirit' is always in the driver's seat; its 'ideas' are what determine the material conditions of social life for humans.

Marx, on the other hand, attempts to argue for the reverse (on the standard reading of the opening quote anyway); it is rather the material conditions of existence that give rise to our 'ideas,' our self-conception, and the world that we live in. Thus it is the very existence of a particular, given, historical, and material way of producing and organizing the human world that leads us to our conceptual organization of the world and ourselves. From this perspective, one can argue that my concept of 'freedom' in general, and myself as a free being in particular, is determined by the very ways in which the world is organized by the existing material (and for Marx, economic) modes and forces of production. As the standard story goes, it is the very material, technologies, tools, and modes of labor that drive human history from below and determine a given community's self-conception. So first there is matter, and then there are ideas that arise out this matter. Hence Materialism. For many that have followed Marx, this reading of history places him on one side of a traditional and long-standing philosophical opposition: that between Materialism and Idealism, where Idealists (represented by Hegel in the reading of his work given above) take it to be the case that what is primary, fundamental, and determinative of the social space are ideas or the mental (and their historical development); Materialists argue, by contrast, that what is primary, fundamental and determinative of the social space is rather matter (and the mental is a product of its material base).

It is, furthermore, the case that, for many of his readers (and followers), Marx's materialist position commits him (and them) to many of the other commonly held tenets of the more general position of philosophical materialism, namely that, as with any good materialism, there is little or no room for contingency: matter is primary and is dominated by the law of cause and effect, thus whatever materially exists, exists as the result of a prior cause, and itself will then serve as a cause for whatever follows it. The immaterial (mind, ideas, or Spirit) is itself, like the effects that necessarily follow from their causes, determined by the matter which supports it. This way of understanding Marx's materialism in its relation to history—as a kind of strict determinism—is, and has been, in effect in varying degrees in many of those that have read and been influenced by Marx. As Eduard Bernstein has quite nicely put the point:

The question of the correctness of the materialist interpretation of history is a question of the determining causes of historic necessity. To be a materialist means first of all, to trace back all phenomena to the necessary movements of matter. These movements of matter are accomplished according to the materialist doctrine from beginning to end as

a mechanical process, each individual process being the necessary result of preceding mechanical facts. Mechanical facts determine, in the last resort, all occurrences, even those which appear to be caused by ideas. It is, finally, always the movement of matter which determines the form of ideas and the directions of the will; and thus these also (and with them everything that happens in the world of humanity) are inevitable. The materialist is thus a Calvinist without God. If he does not believe in a predestination ordained by divinity, yet he believes and must believe that starting from any chosen point of time all further events are, through the whole of existing matter and the directions of force in its parts, determined beforehand. The application of materialism to the interpretation of history means then, first of all, belief in the inevitableness of all historical events and developments. The question is only, in what manner the inevitableness is accomplished in human history, what element of force or what factors of force speak the decisive word, what is the relation of the different factors of force to one another, what part of history falls to the share of nature, of political economy, of legal organizations, of ideas.³

By way of examples of how widespread this view of Marx's conception of history is, we can see that this way of conceiving materialism is not only present in thinkers like Bernstein, but is also present in the body of work produced by the Frankfurt School theorists as well as in the so-called tradition of 'Analytical Marxism,' albeit in a slightly modified form.

In the latter case, that of analytic Marxism, materialistic determinism is worked out in terms of functional explanation. G.A. Cohen, for instance, argues that the material base (the forces of production) is explanatory of both the existence of a given set of production relations and a given superstructure. The production relations and superstructure are, in turn, explained functionally, by asserting that they exist in the particular ways that they do (in a given time) because their particular forms are beneficial for—that is to say, sustain and advance—the forces of production (hence the functionalism: they serve a *function* in their existence). In this way then, the material determines the rest and the rest exists because of its function, which is to benefit the material.

Thus, for Cohen, much like Bernstein, there is a determined path in process in history. Here he writes, "in so far as the course of history, and more particularly, the future socialist revolution are, for Marx, inevitable, they are inevitable, not despite what men do, but because of what men, *being rational*, are bound, predictably to do."⁴ The claim here is that it is because of a human faculty (rationality) and its development—which is, to be sure, grounded in material production—that we can say that there is a determined goal in history (the development of said rationality) and one that is realized materially. So here, Cohen makes of historical materialism very much a kind of Bernsteinian "Calvinism without God."

4 *Introduction*

As noted above, it is also the case that something akin to this is at work in the materialist theories produced by members of the Frankfurt School. Their version of “Calvinist” materialism, however, takes on a decidedly negative tone. According to Horkheimer, in his 1931 inaugural address as head of the Institute for Social Research, the aims of the Institute under his guidance were to be:

... The philosophical interpretations of the vicissitudes of human fate—the fate of humans, not as mere individuals, however, but as members of a community. It [the Institute] is thus above all, concerned with phenomena that can only be understood in the context of human social life: with the state, law, economy, religion—in short, with the entire material and intellectual culture of humanity.⁵

This goal, according to Horkheimer is to be met by analyzing the:

... Connection between the economic life of society, the psychical development of individuals, and the changes in the realm of culture in the narrower sense (to which belong not only the so-called intellectual elements, such as science, art, and religion, but also law, customs, fashion, public opinion, sports, leisure activities, lifestyle, etc.).⁶

Like Cohen, Horkheimer’s materialism commits him to the view that it is the very material, economic life of a society that grounds and determines the development of the individual members of a society’s awareness of themselves—that is, their self-consciousnesses—and their world, as well as all of the cultural and political structures of a given society as a whole. While early in his career, Horkheimer was convinced that such analysis would, through its bringing to light the historically contingent nature of culture and its social structures, “hasten developments which will lead to a society without injustice,” what he found in such analysis was the opposite.⁷

In the end, what Horkheimer finds is not a materialist doctrine that allows for the unraveling of social structures that lead to injustice and oppression, but one that instead reinforces oppression and forecloses on the possibility of change. The material structures that arise in modernity, rather, so enclose and control both culture and the individual that the belief of the early Horkheimer, that through the tools of Critical Theory, humanity could emancipate itself from oppressive forces—by coming to see them as nothing more than particular, contingent, and thus changeable—gives way to analysis of the insidious, determining, and totalizing nature of such material forces. Social theory and materialist philosophy can no longer lead to emancipation. Rather, Horkheimer argues, “philosophy is neither a tool nor a blueprint. It can only foreshadow the path of progress as it is marked out by logical and factual necessities; in doing so it can anticipate the reaction of horror and resistance that that will be evoked by the triumphal march

of modern man.”⁸ It cannot, however, liberate. What we must do instead is wait, resign ourselves to the fact that social change is not yet. So here the Calvinist materialism of Horkheimer is one in which modern humans are utterly determined by the material relations of late capitalism and so much so that change itself no longer seems possible as it is “an inner necessity that has led to the self-surrender by reason” of its capacity for radical social change.⁹ This ‘self-surrender’ is the determined outcome of the historical development of reason out of the material forces that condition it and all one can do is wait for change.

Read in both Cohen’s way and Horkheimer’s way, the doctrine of materialism is nothing more than the proverbial other side of the coin of Idealism. It finds its foundation in the emphasis on determining factors and simply offers the same position that idealism offers but as reversed (it is not ideas that determine existence, but matter, or existence that determine ideas). Recently, however, there has been a growing body of work that seeks to challenge this long held view but remain firmly in a materialist position. This literature finds its roots in the work of the French Marxist philosopher Louis Althusser. This book explores the thought of two of these contemporary representatives of Althusserian thought, namely Alain Badiou and Slavoj Žižek. Each of these theorists identify themselves as materialist but do not take this in the way that we have been describing above. Rather their versions of materialism seek positions outside the standard materialism/idealism debate as described above and, at least in part, seek to undermine it by emphasizing not the determining nature of the material but rather its foundationally indeterminate (and non-teleological) nature. This ‘new materialism, in this way, sees itself in opposition to *both* idealism and the standard brand of materialism described above.

As I will argue in the first two chapters of the book, the Althusserian move that acts as the backdrop against which both Badiou’s and Žižek’s thought exists, is the one that is made in opposition—both politically in Althusser’s critique of the policies of the French Communist Party, and philosophically—to the Stalinist interpretation of Marx’s materialism in which it is simply and only the Capitalist economic processes that determine individual consciousness, historical change, and social progress. As we will see, Althusser, rather, that Marx himself breaks with this kind of view and further, Althusser goes on to undermine such a conception of materialism by arguing that the material conditions themselves are never monolithic in their existence and that though it is the case that these conditions form the basis for all stable social structures, it is precisely their diverse and contradictory nature that determines the social ‘whole’ itself to contain diverse, contradictory, and indeterminate social formations which can (and do) take on different and ultimately unpredictable paths. Though it is the case, according to Althusser, that we can understand the paths that have been taken in the past by retrospectively reconstructing the collection of elements of the material base that gain prominence at a given time.

It is in this argument that the standard version of materialism is called into question.¹⁰ If it is the case that the material conditions which structure our existence are themselves multiple, diverse, and contradictory, then it is not the case that we can ever say with any real certainty that materialism is a doctrine that presents us with a vision of human history as teleological (as in Cohen's case) or as completely and totally foreclosed (as in Horkheimer's). Rather, how it is that we come to understand ourselves (our 'self-consciousness') and how it is that our world comes to be organized (both conceptually and social-structurally) is, in a sense, overdetermined by a contingent collection of material forces and hence, non-teleological. Here Althusser writes, "instead of thinking contingency as a modality of necessity, or an exception to it, we must think necessity as the becoming-necessary of the encounter of contingencies."¹¹ What is primary is not material determination, stability, and necessity—though these are the *results* of the material process—but rather material contingency and chance. This contingency and chance is what 'the necessary' is built upon and thus, it is always unstable and subject to reversal and change. As we will see, however, Althusser's own theoretical attempts at overcoming the teleological view of materialism leave him with the problem of an inability to account—in a Marxist way—for humanity's role in social change insofar as any change itself is relegated to the overdetermined material structures in social existence. As we will see in the last four chapters of this book, it is both the Althusserian insights, and the remaining problems of Althusserian Marxism, that are critical and foundational for the new materialism of Badiou and Žižek in that, each of these thinkers seeks to save certain elements of the Althusserian edifice while at the same time offering a corrective to the problems inherent in it.

It is this 'new materialism' that this book is interested in. It is intended in part, as a contribution to the growing secondary literature on these thinkers and the debate around them (and as such, it engaged much of the recent work being done on these thinkers), in part as introduction to their individual theoretical projects with an emphasis on explaining their materialist standpoints, but most importantly as an argument for the claim that the individual standpoints of Althusser, Badiou, and Žižek also collectively, make up a distinct philosophical tradition, one with a historical foundation in Althusser's work and one that offers a way out of the standard philosophical deadlock of the old materialism/idealism debate.

In the process of making this argument, however, I also confront some of the remaining problems for this particular theoretical orientation. This latter portion of the project is accomplished through the drawing of a distinction between Badiou's and Žižek's respective attempts at overcoming the remaining problems of Althusserianism. After offering a reading of Badiou's project in chapter three, which also shows the theoretical debt to Althusser, I offer, in chapter four, an argument which demonstrates that Badiou's attempts to overcome the problems remaining in the Althusserian orientation leads him, unwittingly, to come dangerously close to a kind of structuralism that

Althusser himself decries as idealist. In chapter five, I turn to Žižek's thought, offering a reading that also seeks to identify the ways in which Žižek is working within the Althusserian tradition and at the same time responding to the problems identified at the end of chapter two. Here I argue throughout both chapters five and six, that Žižek's view avoids the problem of a hidden idealism that seems to plague Badiou's recent work through a return to, and renovation of, Hegel's philosophy *vis-à-vis* a Lacanian inflected Marxism in which Hegel becomes the paradigmatic materialist thinker.

One final point by way of introduction, it seems that any serious study of the work of Slavoj Žižek must say something about the machinery that surrounds both him as a persona and the seeming never-ending string of denunciations and devotions that are constantly being aired in the media, on blogs, in the hallways of the academy, and in other such places. This is also increasingly true for the work of Alain Badiou, though on a much smaller scale than that of the former. I am largely uninterested in weighing in on these debates and controversies. Nor does this book treat either of these thinkers as either gods or charlatans. Rather, what I am interested to do here is take them as they are and for what they are. I see them as nothing more (or less) than philosophers that belong to the long running traditions of both Marxism and Critical Theory and (who are situated within the particular strand of this tradition that emerges out of the Althusserian school). Though I do, as the reader will see, think that these two thinkers offer us a renewed, important, and exciting form of both philosophy and Marxism, my aim here is to read and discuss them as one would with any other contemporary theorist in the tradition of critical theory because, that is what, in the end, both of these thinkers are. Nothing more, nothing less.

NOTES

1. Karl Marx, "Preface to a Critique of Political Economy" in *Karl Marx: Selected Writings 2nd Edition*, edited by David McLellen (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2000), 425.
2. To be sure, Hegel does not think that every individual in a given community will have the same understanding of such concepts or even that any individual in said community will have a transparent understanding of their own understanding of such concepts. In fact, part of the Hegelian enterprise is to read back into particular times and places the underlying—unconscious—understanding of such concepts.
3. Eduard Bernstein, *Evolutionary Socialism*, www.marxists.org/reference/archive/bernstein/works/1899/evsoc/index.htm.
4. G.A. Cohen, *Karl Marx's Theory of History: A Defense* (Princeton: Princeton University Press, 2000), 147 Emphasis mine.
5. Max Horkheimer, "The Present Situation of Social Philosophy and the Tasks of an Institute for Social Research" in *Between Philosophy and Social Science: Selected Early Writings*, translated by G. Frederick Hunter, Matthew S. Kramer, and John Torpey (Cambridge and London: MIT Press, 1993), 1.
6. *Ibid.*, 11.

7. Horkheimer, "Traditional and Critical Theory" in *Critical Theory: Selected Essays*, translated by Matthew J. O'Connell (New York: Herder and Herder, 1972), 221.
8. Horkheimer, *The Eclipse of Reason* (New York: Continuum, 1947), 112.
9. Horkheimer, *Critique of Instrumental Reason*, translated by Matthew J. O'Connell and others (New York: Continuum, 1974), vii.
10. This argument will, of course, be further explained in the chapters on Althusser.
11. Louis Althusser, "The Underground Current of the Materialism of the Encounter" in *Philosophy of the Encounter: Later Writings 1978–1987*, translated by G.M. Goshgarian (New York and London: Verso, 2006), 193–194. [Hereafter PE]

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Althusser, Louis. *Philosophy of the Encounter: Later Writings 1978–1987*. Edited by Francois Matheron and Oliver Corpet. Translated by G.M. Goshgarian. New York and London: Verso, 2006.
- Bernstein, Eduard. *Evolutionary Socialism*, 1899 www.marxists.org/reference/archive/bernstein/works/1899/evsoc/index.htm.
- Cohen, G.A. *Karl Marx's Theory of History: A Defense*. Princeton: Princeton University Press, 2000.
- Horkheimer, Max. *Critique of Instrumental Reason*. Translated by Matthew J. O'Connell and others. New York: Continuum, 1974.
- . *The Eclipse of Reason*. New York: Continuum, 1947.
- . "The Present Situation of Social Philosophy and the Tasks of an Institute For Social Research" in *Between Philosophy and Social Science: Selected Early Writings*. Translated by G. Frederick Hunter, Matthew S. Kramer, and John Torpey. Cambridge and London: MIT Press, 1993. 1–14
- . "Traditional and Critical Theory" in *Critical Theory: Selected Essays*. Translated by Matthew J. O'Connell. New York: Herder and Herder, 1972.
- Marx, Karl. "Preface to a Critique of Political Economy" in *Karl Marx: Selected Writings 2nd Edition*. Edited by David McLellen. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2000.

1 Louis Althusser and the *Parti Communiste Français*

Althusser was conducting a struggle against a certain hegemony which was at the same time a terrifying dogmatism or philosophical stereotypism within the Party—a struggle that seemed to me (within the limits of that context) quite necessary.

—Jacques Derrida¹

The War was just over. We were brutally cast into the Party's great political and ideological battles: We had to measure up to our choice and take the consequences . . . In our philosophical memory it remains a period of intellectuals in arms, hunting out error from all its hiding places; of the philosophers we were, without writings of our own, but making politics out of all writing, and slicing up the world with a single blade, arts, literatures, philosophies, sciences, with the pitiless demarcation of class—the period summed up in caricature by a single phrase, a banner flapping in the void: bourgeois science, proletarian science.

—Louis Althusser²

As noted in the introduction, what these two chapters on Althusser aim to do is to situate his work both theoretically and politically so as to get a picture of how the problem of ideology—the problem that frames the discussion of Badiou and Žižek in the latter chapters of this book—emerges in relation to both Althusser's attempts to give a philosophical foundation to Marx's texts and to use this philosophical foundation to combat what he saw politically, as a problematic brand of both Stalinism, and later, humanist Marxism running through the French Communist Party (the *Parti Communiste Français* [PCF]). As Althusser argues in many places throughout his texts (and as we will see in more detail), philosophy is not neutral, nor is it an objective, apolitical pursuit. Rather, as he puts it in one of his formulations of this view, “the philosophical fight over words is part of the political fight.”³ This is to say, that philosophy is, inherently political. In a late interview, Althusser, speaking of this fight in the context of his engagement with the PCF argues explicitly that his philosophical work, at least in part, was undertaken in order to shift the politics of the party:

I wanted to intervene in France in the French Communist Party, which I joined in 1948, in order to struggle against triumphant Stalinism and its

disastrous effects on my Party's politics. At the time, I had no choice: if I had intervened publicly in the politics of the party which had refused to publish even my philosophical writings (on Marx), deemed heretical and dangerous, I would have been, at least until 1970, immediately expelled . . . So there remained only one way for me to intervene politically in the party: by way of pure theory—that is, philosophy.⁴

In what follows in this chapter, I will look at the political and ideological landscape in which Althusser's interventions took place. In doing so, I will both look at some of the history of the PCF's political positions and the broader currents of Marxist thought in France just before and during Althusser's time, as these are crucial for making sense of the political motives behind Althusser's theoretic. To be sure, I am not aiming to give an exhaustive account of either the history of the PCF or the history of Marxism in France as this is not the goal of this book—and of course, there are others who have already done this job quite well.⁵ That said, what I do wish to do is focus here on one of two main elements in this history. Namely, the PCF's Stalinist view of the split between proletarian and bourgeois science and the later battle over the theoretical foundations of the party (and its outcomes) during the period of de-Stalinization as it is around these two key moments that much of Althusser's theoretical work of the 1960s has its political and philosophical grounding. What I will show here—and this is something that is explored less in the literature surrounding this period and Althusser's relation to it (at least in Anglophone scholarship)—is how arguments within the PCF on cultural Zhdanovism (in the realm of art and literature) pave the way for the acceptance of the Stalinist conception of the sciences.

I.

The place in which to begin this story is with the setting up, in 1947, of the Cominform, or the Communist Information Bureau, which on the surface was, as Maxwell Adereth points out, a response to the Truman Doctrine and was an “organization of nine parties (seven European CPs which were in power plus the PCF and the PCI) for the purposes of ‘exchanging views and information’.”⁶ However, in practice, the Cominform was effectively an authoritative and doctrinaire arm of the Stalinist program and was led by Stalin's head of cultural policies Andrei Zhdanov. Zhdanov's charge, under the heading of what he called ‘socialist realism’ was to promote the Stalinist ‘two cultures’ view. This was, namely, the view “that there existed a Bourgeois, decadent culture whose aim was to maintain and justify the existing socio-economic order” and that there was a “proletarian culture” whose aim it was “to serve the revolution.”⁷ One of the goals of the Cominform under Zhdanov was thus to work to actively cultivate and unify proletarian culture and at the same time, to work to get rid of bourgeois culture. It did

this, in part by setting policy that required “that artistic and literary creation had to depict the life and working conditions of workers, project the image of ‘positive heroes’ and, as a result, appeal to workers.”⁸

This, of course, was also the directive given to the PCF and the other European communist parties after the creation of the Cominform. The PCF, however, did not (at least initially) wholeheartedly embrace this directive. Prior to 1947, though the PCF adhered to a kind of socialist realism, it had been quite liberal in its approach to this and had, at least from about 1934 until the Cominform, begun to loosen its belief in the ‘two cultures’ approach in favor of a more nationalistic and pluralistic view of culture.⁹ In fact, as Guiat points out:

in the years 1944–1947, the cultural line of the PCF was one of relative tolerance which matched its global strategy of political alliance with other parties at this time, and the party encouraged open debate between its intellectuals and non-PCF ones.¹⁰

Echoing Guiat’s claims about the opening up of the PCF’s cultural politics at this time, Adereth points to the party’s 1943 role in helping organize and promote the *Comité National des Écrivains* (CNE), which was a group open to French writers of all political views and included both party and non-party affiliated intellectuals.¹¹ Further, two journals existed during this time that also promoted this more pluralistic view. One was *Les Lettres Françaises*, a monthly communist journal (but one that published non-PCF affiliated work), and the other, *Action*, was created by writers in the resistance but was not strictly communist (it was, however, friendly to communist writers).¹² So, when the Cominform was imposed, it caused a debate within the PCF as to just how far the Party was going to adhere to Zhdanovism. Roger Garaudy—who was, at the time the head of intellectuals and culture for the PCF—had recently written an article that had appeared in *Les Lettres*—the title of which was ‘*Il n’y a pas d’esthétique communiste*’ (There is no Communist Aesthetic)—in which he argues, as one would expect given the title, that there is not one aesthetic which is communist, that “communist artists should be given a certain level of artistic freedom, and that the Party should not impose socialist realism as the only model or credo to be followed.”¹³ In another place, Garaudy, again reiterating this stance, argues that “Marxism is not a prison. It is a tool to understand the world” and thus to impose one style on Marxist intellectuals was problematic.¹⁴

Louis Aragon led an orthodox challenge to this view arguing that the only proper aesthetic for the communist artists and intellectuals is one defined by Zhdanovism and socialist realism. In one of his responses to Garaudy, Aragon argues that Garaudy himself had been critical of other aesthetic movements, most notably that which was defined by its affiliation with existentialism: “. . . If all aesthetics are good, what is to be made of the fact that Garaudy had repeatedly attacked existentialism with a passion

for which I could not blame him? Properly speaking, could a communist also be a surrealist?"¹⁵

Aragon goes on to argue here that even if Garaudy were to reject his own critique of existentialist aesthetics and really subscribe to a more neutral position, this would be untenable. Such neutrality would end in "escapism in art, the intangibility of art, the culture of all the poisons and ideologies of the dominant class, under the cloak of eclecticism."¹⁶ Aragon and his followers eventually won this debate and Garaudy was removed from his position to be replaced by Laurent Casanova and Zhdanovism became official PCF policy.

So the Party's leadership set itself the task of promoting proletarian culture, which, as Guiat argues, ". . . was mostly to take the form of a proletarian literature following the Russian model of *rabcors*, that is to say workers writing about workers and for workers about life in the factories, and so on."¹⁷ Not only, however, did the Cominform—and the PCF—push for, and support the cultural production of proletarian art and literature, but it was also the case that all other intellectual activity became subjected to the 'two cultures' view. This included, as will be discussed below, scientific intellectual activity.

II.

It was around this time that Ukrainian agronomist Trofim Lysenko came to prominence in the Soviet Union and along with this, the Cominform's (and ultimately the PCF's) championing of the view that, as with other areas of culture, in science there are also 'two cultures,' one bourgeois and one proletarian, and that it is only the latter that is able to get to the truth in scientific practice. Lysenko's rejection of Mendelian genetics was premised on the view that instead of heredity being governed by genetic material, it was the product of "a whole organism's relationship with its host environment, reasoning that modification of the environment could effect the transformation of a living organisms and furthermore, such modifications could be bequeathed to the organisms offspring."¹⁸ In other words, Lysenko rejected any notion that there is a fixed biological component to heredity and he argued that heredity is driven solely by environmental factors and in relation to individual organisms and their offspring (and so he rejected biological determinism in favor of environmental determinism). In addition to this, he rejected the notion of competition within members of a single species and argued that there was no proof of such competition.¹⁹ Lysenko was also quite adept at promoting himself and his views. He quickly realized that he could adapt his view to Marxism and, as Dominique Lecourt points out, Lysenko's refutation of Mendelism "is presented as an application of categories of Marxist philosophy: dialectics, contradiction, the criterion of practice . . . the whole classical vocabulary of dialectical materialism

was mobilized by Lysenko to arrange and unify his arguments.”²⁰ So, for instance, as Lyle argues, according to Lysenko, to defend Mendelian genetics

. . . was tantamount to supporting Western Bourgeois imperialist values supposed to have been derived from a crude social Darwinism whose utility as a theoretical justification extended all the way from the ruthless competition of American capitalism to the racial and social hierarchies of *Mein Kampf* and the eugenic horrors of Nazi Germany and beyond.²¹

The PCF’s support for Lysenko was unequivocal and stemmed in large part, as noted above, from the same support for Zhdanovism in other areas of culture. Articles published in *Les Lettres* and *L’Humanité* in 1948 (by Jean Champenois and Georges Cogniot, respectively) discussed Lysenko’s views approvingly, while skewering Mendelianism for being, as Cogniot put it in his article, “bourgeois, Metaphysical and reactionary.”²² This support was further entrenched when other French journals such as *Action* published work trying to unite Lysenko’s and Mendelian views (continuing in the pluralist lines that they had a few years earlier).²³ Casanova, responding to such attempts at pluralism, argues that it is the role of the communist intellectual

to espouse all the ideological and political positions of the working class, to defend in all circumstances, and with the utmost determination, all the positions of the Party . . . , to cultivate in ourselves the love of the Party and the spirit of the Party in its utmost conscious form, to give the proletariat any additional arguments and justifications that you can.²⁴

This of course, is further evidence of the hard return to the Stalinist two cultures view within the PCF and the rejection of its earlier, more pluralist orientation. Furthermore, Aragon, picking up on Cogniot’s claims regarding the bourgeois and reactionary nature of Mendelian genetics, writes, “personally, I am not a biologist. My confidence in Marxism naturally makes me wish that the Michurians [i.e., supporters of Lysenko] will be proved right in this dispute.”²⁵ And Jean-Toussaint Desanti, writing in *La Nouvelle Critique*, argues that science is a “social product” and a “historically relative ideology” therefore “taking a proletarian stance in science and adopting the criteria of proletarian science” are the “preconditions for objectivity in science.”²⁶ Maurice Thorez, the leader of the PCF at this time, also facilitated the adoption of Lysenkoism as well as the attendant two cultures view into the PCF’s position, and in 1951 a group of PCF intellectuals produced the now famous pamphlet *Science Bourgeoise et Science Prolétarienne* wherein they argue for an expanded version of these positions; as William Lewis points out:

Though each contributor [to the pamphlet] focused on a different problem, all were unanimous in the conclusion that, at least since the Greeks,

there had existed two types of science: one materialist and revolutionary, the other idealist and conservative. Of the latter, they argued that it was fundamentally unable to provide knowledge of the world as it really was because it is based on the mistaken positivist assumption that laws are discoverable through empirical inquiry. By way of contrast, proletarian science (or that which was alternatively termed ‘scientific socialism’) recognizes at the heart of its method the dialectical relationship between theory and practice and produces true knowledge of the world.²⁷

In this way, the PCF and its intellectual leadership comes to see Stalinist Marxism as that which allows it to discern the difference between that which is bourgeois cultural and intellectual production and hence ideological and that which is non-ideological and true. In this way, Stalinism alone allows one to see the mistaken (and bourgeois) science of Mendel and other sciences practiced in Western capitalist countries as ideological as it uncovers the ways in which, again as Lewis puts it, in these countries, “the sciences always work to confirm the ideology of the Bourgeois.”²⁸

Other intellectuals in the French scene were not so ready to adopt the two cultures view offered by Zhdanov and Lysenko. For instance, Albert Camus, writing in the same year that the PCF published the pamphlet on bourgeois and proletarian science has this to say about the Stalinist/Zhdanovist/Lysenkoist attempts at making science Marxist in this way:

... it is not surprising that it has been necessary to render science Marxist through terror. The progress of science, since Marx, has roughly consisted in replacing determinism and the rather crude mechanism of its period by a doctrine of provisional probability. Marx wrote to Engels that the Darwinian theory constituted the very foundation of their method. For Marxism to remain infallible, it has therefore been necessary to deny all biological discoveries made since Darwin. As it happens that all discoveries since have consisted of introducing, contrary to the doctrines of determinism, the idea of hazard into biology, it has been necessary to entrust Lysenko with the task of disciplining chromosomes and demonstrating once again the truth of the most elementary determinism.²⁹

So there was pushback, but not really from within the party. This lasted until a few years after Khrushchev’s 1956 ‘secret speech’ at the Twentieth Congress at which time the PCF began its rocky process of de-Stalinization. I will return to this in a moment as it is particularly relevant for understanding the Althusser’s anti-humanist Marx. For now, I want to—after a brief foray into Althusser’s reading of Marx (which I will also return to in chapter two)—shift to a discussion of how, within Althusser’s theoretics, he hoped to combat the Stalinist conception of Marxist Science and the ‘two cultures view.’

III.

As is well known, Althusser argues that many who read Marx make the mistake of seeing a kind of continuity between his early work and his late work. The problem, Althusser argues, is that those who hold this view fail to see that Marx himself was caught in a particular ideology in his early work—that of a kind of Feuerbachianism—and that Marx subsequently frees himself of this in his later work. It is under the influence of Feuerbach that Marx makes his pronouncements about the end of alienation and the reconciliation of humanity with its ‘essence’ in the coming communism and so on.³⁰ In this way, Marx’s conception of a human ‘essence’ and the subsequent belief that this implies, namely that there is a ‘truth’ that humanity has been alienated from in the capitalist modes of production, is derived from the Feuerbachian conception of God being nothing more than humanity’s alienation of its own essence in the religious.³¹ In these early writings there is no discussion of ‘ideology’ as such because, Althusser argues, Marx did not yet have a theory of such a thing, nor did he need one, the Feuerbachian concepts of ‘man’ and his ‘alienation’ from himself gave Marx all of the explanatory power that was necessary for the critique of capitalism as it was given in the early writings. As Althusser shows us, according to Marx’s early Feuerbachian view:

History is the alienation and production of reason in unreason, of the true man in the alienated man. Without knowing it, man realizes the essence of man in the alienated products of his labor (commodities, State, religion). The loss of man produces history and man must presuppose a definite pre-existing essence. At the end of history, this man, having become inhuman objectivity, has merely to re-grasp as a subject his own essence alienated in property, religion, and the State to become total man, true man.³²

As Althusser goes on to argue, it is this view that Marx abandons when, in his later work, he begins to use the conceptual apparatus of the base/superstructure model (and the all important concept of ideology).³³ So, Marx came to see that while his Feuerbachianism had initially helped propel his work, it too would have to be overcome as the belief in an ‘essence’ of humans was nothing more than a particular ideological form itself. And this ideology was limiting his ability to make sense of social phenomena in a fully materialist fashion. Marx began to realize this as early as the *Theses on Feuerbach* and Althusser, famously, offers a reading of a portion of the Sixth Thesis to back this claim up. The crucial moment here is the moment when Marx states at the beginning of the thesis that: “Feuerbach resolves the religious essence into the human essence. *But the human essence is no abstraction inherent in each single individual. In its reality it is the ensemble of the social relations.*”³⁴ Here is Althusser:

To give this theoretically contorted sentence a meaning, one has to retrace, in reverse, the detour it had to make simply in order to be pronounceable. This is the detour I mean. It is necessary to have done with Feuerbach, and therefore with what he included in the human essence. It is not enough to say, as in 1843: Man is the world of Man, society, the State. The world of Man is not the objectification of his essence; it is not mere objects, it consists of altogether astounding realities: *relations*, taken in their 'ensemble.'³⁵

In order for Marx to even make such a claim he has to have already let go of the influence of Feuerbach. This is because as Marx writes here, it is not in the objects (commodities, society, the State) of the human world that we find an alienated (and thus reclaimable) 'essence' of humanity but rather it is the 'social relations' that become grouped together into a particular 'ensemble' at a given time that offer us something like a 'human essence.' But this means that there is no 'abstract' essence of humanity to be alienated and objectified—rather, it is social relations and the ensemble of them that exists at any given time, that calls something like an essence into being. This 'essence' however, is not really an essence but is rather an ideological mis-recognition that posits the existence of a fixed essential being or human nature. Althusser argues that the late Marx recognizes that human 'essence' is not something 'recoverable' or eternal, but is rather contingent and determined by the 'social relations' as they are at any given moment in history. Furthermore and perhaps more importantly, this 'essence' *has no existence of its own* outside of the contingently grouped social relations that exist at a given time. Human 'essence' is a 'whole' that is dependent on the elements (the social relations) upon which it is premised.

So, the shift that begins here, according to Althusser, is a move away from a kind of humanism in Marx where we begin with an alienated human essence and become unalienated through a process of objectification and reconciliation, to a kind of anti-humanism in which our understanding of both ourselves and our world is nothing more than the product of a particular, contingent set of social relations that congeal into a particular ensemble at a given point in history.³⁶ This explains, claims Althusser, the increasingly shifting emphasis in Marx's texts to the analysis of these social relations (economic relations, forces of production, etc.) and the move away from the more utopian concerns of the early Marx.

In making this argument, as is well known, Althusser draws upon the Bachelardian concept of an 'epistemological break.' Althusser's debt to Bachelard is important not just for his re-reading of Marx. I want to now turn to a discussion of how this move is also quite crucial for the critique of the PCF's Marxism as it is the case that Althusser's employment of Bachelard can also be seen as a means to combat the PCF's understanding of Marxist 'science.' I will begin this with a brief discussion of Bachelard's understand and use of the term.

IV.

Bachelard's own use of the concept of an epistemological break refers both to his conception of the changes that the sciences themselves undergo throughout history, and the changes that they affect in epistemology more generally. Like Comte, Bachelard argues that the human pursuit of knowledge is characterized by a history of radical shifts, discontinuities, and ruptures with earlier conceptions of reality; in order to come to know anything new, according to Bachelard, the scientist must 'break' with her previously held beliefs about the nature of the world. Unlike Comte, however, Bachelard does not conceive of these ruptures as only serving the function of revising and correcting one's epistemological standpoint.

They do in fact act as revisions but these revisions do not, for Bachelard, reveal a truth about the nature of reality that pre-exists scientific practice (though the scientist herself does think of her practice this way). For Bachelard, the practices that a scientist engages in are involved in the construction of the objects a given science studies. The scientist usually does not recognize this and is in this way trapped in a kind of ideology (in Althusser's sense, namely an imaginary relationship to their world [more on this in the next chapter]). Furthermore, the practices that the scientist engages in are themselves (again, in an Althusserian sense) fully material and act on the scientist's knowledge in a dialectical manner such that these practices themselves (through their partial construction of their object) influence the scientist's conceptual awareness. In order to see this further, we should back up a moment and take a look at how Bachelard describes this process, beginning with his concept of the rupture or epistemological break that takes place in scientific practice and leads to a rejection of previously held beliefs.

The rejection that is conditioned by the break is not a mere rejection of some of the scientist's conceptions about the nature of the world and revision of others, but it requires a kind of rooting out—in a Cartesian fashion—of those beliefs that hinder one's ability to incorporate the 'new' into their understanding (and a continued vigilance in making sure that earlier conceptions of reality are not creeping in to the scientific process), it is precisely the 'new' experience that the scientist has that allows for this, though the scientist herself may not recognize this process for what it is as Bachelard points out:

For the scientist, knowledge emerges from ignorance as light emerges from darkness. The scientist fails to see that ignorance is a web of positive, tenacious, interdependent errors. He does not recognize that intellectual darkness has a structure and that, this being so, every correct objective experience, must always entail the correction of a subjective error. But errors are not easily destroyed one by one. They are coordinated. The scientific mind can only establish itself by destroying the non-scientific mind . . .³⁷

The point here is, again a Comtean one, that the ‘ignorance’ itself is not actually a lack of knowledge, it is a particular kind of knowledge, a fully positive web of beliefs that make up the scientist’s pre-scientific worldview (and self-understanding). This web comes from many sources according to Bachelard, all of which are socio-historical in origin. This is to say that the web of positive belief is the result of the influence of the social, the knowledge that is imparted to one by one’s schooling in the currently (and dogmatically) held beliefs about the nature of the world. This schooling can take on explicit forms such as in the case of actual schooling and it can take on less obvious forms such as that commonly held beliefs about the nature of the world that one finds in one’s everyday experience that are found in religious traditions, social habits, and the like. It is precisely this everyday experience that needs to be rejected in order for the scientific outlook to take hold, as it is this positive web of beliefs that acts as a barrier to the experiencing of the ‘new.’ As Tom Eyers, talking of such influences and echoing what was said above has put this:

The particular psychology of the scientist or the group of scientists, inevitably immersed as they are in the vagaries of non-scientific influences, must also be accounted for contributing as they do to what Bachelard calls “epistemological obstacles”, obstacles that potentially militate against the emergence of an epistemological shift.³⁸

It is the ability to recognize a ‘new’ experience for what it is, rather than something which confirms one’s pre-existing belief system that constitutes and allows for scientific ‘advancement,’ but in order to recognize such a new experience one must refrain from seeing it from the perspective of those previously held beliefs.³⁹

Furthermore, it is the rejection of these obstacles that results in the epistemological break, which makes possible for the scientist the experience of the ‘new’ in her investigations. What the experience of the ‘new’ does instead of getting to some purely objective fact of the matter, is open up a space from which to view one’s web of beliefs as that which prevented the acquisition of this new knowledge in the past, and hence allows the scientist to reject this web as error. To be sure, for Bachelard, this process does not in the end really uncover a ‘truer’ objective reality, rather it is simply a changed conception of it and one that makes the previous ways of understanding one as if they are errors (thus it retroactively confers the title of ‘error’ on one’s previous beliefs). As noted above, Bachelard seeks to show how it is the ‘new’ experience found in science is itself in part generated by scientific practice and its modes of knowing. Here Bachelard writes:

Scientific observation is always polemical; it either confirms or denies a prior thesis, a preexisting model, an observational protocol. It shows as it demonstrates; it establishes a hierarchy of appearances; it transcends

the immediate; it reconstructs first its own models and then reality. And once the step is taken from observation to experimentation, the polemical character of knowledge stands out even more sharply.⁴⁰

Not only does scientific practice construct its objects in this way, but it does so with the help of scientific instruments which are the material component of scientific practice. The laboratory, the microscope, the spectrometer—these are all material representations of a given scientific practice. Bachelard continues:

Now Phenomena must be selected, filtered, purified, shaped by instruments; indeed, *it may well be the instruments that produce the phenomenon in the first place. And instruments are nothing but theories materialized.* The phenomena they produce bear the stamp of theory throughout.⁴¹

Furthermore, the instruments themselves then, not only ‘produce’ their objects, but they also influence the conceptual apparatus that the scientist employs. In this way then, the scientific mind is the dialectally produced product of the material practices it employs (and the experiences it has as a result of this practice) and through which it constructs its world. Here Bachelard in making this point, tells us to “consider how ‘realism’ changes, losing its naïve immediacy, in its encounter with scientific skepticism. Similarly ‘rationalism’ need not be a closed system. *A priori* assumptions are subject to change (witness the weakening of Euclid’s postulates in non-Euclidean geometry for example).”⁴²

The further Bachelardian point here is that it is this (not necessarily the objective knowledge itself) that is the upshot of the scientific perspective. Scientific practice conditions the scientist (if done properly anyway) to view the world (and any given knowledge about it) with a kind of openness that recognizes that any ‘facts’ that exist are non-permanent and can be overcome by the discovery of new evidence (the employment of new methods and practices that render the old ideological). In this way, Bachelard defines “the philosophy of scientific knowledge as an open philosophy, as the consciousness of a mind which constitutes itself by working upon the known, by seeking within reality *that which contradicts anterior knowledge.*”⁴³ The scientist becomes the kind of thinker (through her practice) that rejects the givenness with which reality seems to exist. Further, and once again, the experience of the ‘new’ itself is conditioned by the practices (and the instruments) that the scientist both engages in and engages with. It is this characterization of scientific practice and the epistemological break with given reality that appeals to Althusser and that Althusser reads into Marx’s project. It is also in this that we can see the foundations of the critique of the remaining vestiges of Zhdanovist scientific theory that existed within the PCF during the time that Althusser was working through his re-reading of Marx in the 1960s (as well as the strict adherence to it that he had witnessed in his earlier days in the Party).

V.

Althusser agrees with the Zhdanovists that Marxist science is that through which one can come to separate that which is scientific and true from that which is ideological. It allows for this insofar as it gives us the tools for, in a Bachelardian fashion, the constructing of the scientific mind that can come to identify those elements of its beliefs (and practices) that are merely the result of social, cultural, and economic history and hence, simply part of the Bachelardian ‘web of beliefs’ that form the epistemological obstacles that are to be overcome in proper (Marxist) scientific theoretical analysis and practice. He disagrees, however, with the PCFs view that such a scientific practice bottoms out in the Lysenkoist view and the split between a bourgeois and a proletarian science. This is because such a view is itself the product of a particular ideology and to claim that there is such division in science is to mis-recognize what is merely ideological and what is not and thus to not really be doing science; or as Althusser himself, reflecting on this whole episode in the introduction to Dominique Lecourt’s *Proletarian Science? The Case of Lysenko*, will put it, it seems that here “Marxist philosophers [have] forgotten what Marx said about dialectics, that it could become one thing or the other, could either become ‘critical and revolutionary’, or play the role of ‘glorifying the existing state of affairs’.”⁴⁴ In the thoroughly Stalinized hands of the PCF, Althusser clearly thought that the latter had occurred.

There is, to be sure, a connected problem that remains here in Althusser’s philosophy of science which exists—at least in part—as a result of his use of Bachelard. This is that it remains, as Lewis has pointed out, a conventionalist account.⁴⁵ Because for both Althusser and Bachelard, science and scientific knowledge are products of the practices that science engages in, there is no ‘external’ check on that knowledge that proves that it is ‘objective.’ In other words, science and scientific knowledge—even insofar as it is able to overcome the Bachelardian ‘web of beliefs’—is produced solely within the realm of a given set of scientific practices and concepts. As Lewis notes echoing a bit of what I said above, Althusser offers a way of overcoming the problem by arguing that ultimately, it is the role of philosophy to provide this check:

The way Althusser attempts to get around the problem of external verification is by suggesting that philosophy is the practice that guarantees the internal coherency of a science. As he defines it, philosophy is a theoretical practice whose objects are scientific concepts. Philosophy . . . does not change scientific concepts in order to make new ones. Instead it clarifies and makes explicit a science’s internal logic as sorts true scientific concepts from the ideological concepts in which they are embedded.⁴⁶

It matters little for our purposes whether this is an adequate response to the concern of conventionalism. What is important here is how this, again,

is linked to the goal of challenging the PCF's splitting of the sciences. Recall Desanti's claim referenced above that "adopting a proletarian stance in science" is the "precondition for objectivity in science."⁴⁷ Althusser's conventionalism outright refutes this statement—there is no ability to attain objectivity (or external verification of truth) *from within* a practice of proletarian science. Such a guarantee can only be granted by philosophy and through philosophical analysis of scientific practices and concepts. Such an analysis will, presumably yield the ideological nature of Lysenkoism (which of course was Althusser's view all along). So, what is important—in the context of what I have been discussing—is that the both the Bachelardian conception of science and scientific practice, and Althusser's subsequent elevation of (Marxist) philosophy to the role of the practice of external verification for a given scientific practice (among other things) act both as philosophical and political interventions in the conjunctural debates being had within the PCF at this time. I want to turn briefly now to a discussion of some of the other forces at work both in the Party during the early 1960s and in the wider context of French Marxism in order to introduce a more in-depth discussion in the next chapter, of Althusser's reinvention of Marx's philosophy.

As I alluded to above, after Khrushchev's speech, the PCF began to distance itself from its Stalinist positions. This, however, was a very slow process, as Lewis points out, "thoroughly Stalinized and with Party secretary Maurice Thorez administering his own cult of personality, it really took the PCF four years to even entertain changes to its orthodox positions."⁴⁸ When it finally began to do this, the PCF was in need of a new philosophical understanding of Marx and Marxism. For this, it turned not to Althusser's anti-humanist Marx, but back to Roger Garaudy and his humanist Marxism.

There was, of course, great debate about this move which culminated in the PCF's 1966 resolution coming out of its Central Committee meeting at Argenteuil—which took place in March of that year—in which they discussed these debates and ultimately adopted the humanist Marxism of Garaudy over and against Althusser's reading. I'll not detail these debates here as they have been well covered by others.⁴⁹ Althusser's response to this, given in a letter that he wrote to the Central Committee is to say—in part—that what the PCF has done is to "intervene on several questions [in Marxist research] that, for the last few years, have been the object of theoretical research and discussion."⁵⁰ And further, that in this intervention, the PCF has acted as though these questions are settled when in fact they are, according to Althusser very far from settled and "remain open."⁵¹ In the next chapter, as I have already noted, I will turn toward Althusser's philosophical and theoretical contribution to these debates—both as they exist within the PCF and in the wider philosophical community—and turn away from the more practical, historical, and conjunctural concerns that animate much of this chapter (though I will have occasion to refer to this again later on). It is the philosophical/theoretical that will frame the relations between Althusser, his

work, and the work of both Badiou and Žižek in their attempts at renovating the Althusserian edifice. My hope here is that the present chapter has done enough to show some of the more practical and political concerns that at least partially provoke and underlie Althusser's philosophical work.

NOTES

1. Jacques Derrida, "Politics and Friendship: An Interview with Jacques Derrida" in *The Althusserian Legacy*, edited by E. Ann. Kaplan and Michael Springer (London and New York: Verso, 1993), 189.
2. Louis Althusser, *For Marx*, translated by Ben Brewster (New York and London: Verso, 2005), 22.
3. Louis Althusser, "Philosophy as a Revolutionary Weapon" in *New Left Review*, Vol. 1, No. 64 (November–December 1970), 3–11.
4. Louis Althusser, "Philosophy and Marxism" in *Philosophy of the Encounter: Later Writings 1978–1987*, edited by Francious Matheron and Oliver Corpet, translated by G.M. Goshgarian (New York and London: Verso, 2006), 253.
5. See for instance, Maxwell Adereth, *The French Communist Party: A Critical History (1920–1984) from Comintern to "The Colors of France"* (Manchester and Dover: Manchester University Press, 1984).
6. *Ibid.*, 226.
7. Cyrille Guiat, *The French and Italian Communist Parties: Comrades and Culture* (London and Portland: Frank Cass, 2003), 58.
8. *Ibid.*, 60.
9. *Ibid.* As Guiat points out here, this has as much to do with the formation of an anti-fascist alliance during wartime and the Popular Front coalition as it does anything else.
10. *Ibid.*, 59.
11. Adereth, *The French Communist Party*, 121.
12. Adereth, *The French Communist Party*, 121, cf. Guiat, *The French and Italian Communist Parties*, 59.
13. Guiat, *The French and Italian Communist Parties*, 50.
14. Garaudy, "Artists sans Uniforme" quoted in Gertje Utley, *Picasso: The Communist Years* (New Haven and London: Yale University Press, 2000), 134.
15. Louis Aragon, "L'Art. 'zone libre?'" *Les Lettres francaises*, Vol. 6. No. 136 (November 1946), quoted in and translated by, Ellen Adams, *After the Rain: Surrealism and the Post-World War II Avant-Garde 1940–1950*, Published Dissertation (New York University: Proquest Dissertations Publishing, 2007), 230.
16. *Ibid.*, 230–231.
17. Guiat, *The French and Italian Communist Parties*, 58.
18. Louise Lyle, "Science Bourgeoise et Science Proletarienne: French Literary Responses to the Lysenko Affair" in *The Lost Decade?: The 1950s in European History, Politics, Society and Culture*, edited by Heiko Feldner, Claire Gorrara, and Kevin Passmore (Newcastle: Cambridge Scholars Publishing, 2011), 214.
19. For a good overview of this argument see Dominique Lecourt, *Proletarian Science? The Case of Lysenko*, translated by Ben Brewster (London: New Left Books, 1977), especially 29–31.
20. *Ibid.*, 55.
21. Lyle, "Science Bourgeoise et Science Proletarienne", 215.

22. Ibid., 217.
23. Ibid.
24. Laurent Casanova quoted in Guiat, *The French and Italian Communist Parties*, 60.
25. Aragon, quoted in Lyle, “Science Bourgeoise et Science Proletarienne”, 214.
26. Jean-Toussaint Desanti, quoted in Gregory Elliott Althusser; *The Detour of Theory* (Leiden: Brill, 2005), 69.
27. William Lewis, *Louis Althusser and the Traditions of French Marxism* (Lanham: Lexington Books, 2005), 122–123.
28. Ibid.
29. Albert Camus, *The Rebel*, translated by Anthony Bower (New York: Vintage, 1956), 221–222. Also quoted in Lyle, “Science Bourgeoise et Science Proletarienne”, 217.
30. See Karl Marx, “The Economic and Philosophic Manuscripts of 1844” in *The Marx Engels Reader 2nd Edition*, edited by Robert C. Tucker (New York and London: Norton, 1978), especially 84–85.
31. See Ludwig Feuerbach, *The Essence of Christianity*, translated by George Eliot (New York: Prometheus Books, 1989).
32. Louis Althusser, *For Marx*, 226.
33. Ibid., 227.
34. Marx, “Theses on Feuerbach” in *Marx Engels Reader*, edited by Tucker, 145 (my emphasis).
35. Louis Althusser, “The Humanist Controversy” in *Louis Althusser: The Humanist Controversy and Other Writings*, edited by Francois Matheron, translated by G.M. Goshgarian (New York and London: Verso, 2003), 255.
36. I will return to a discussion of the material nature of these social relations (and their status as contingent in the next chapter).
37. Gaston Bachelard, *The Philosophy of No*, translated by G.C. Waterston (New York: Orion Press, 1968), 8.
38. Tom Eyers, *Post-Rationalism: Psychoanalysis, Epistemology, and Marxism in Post-War France* (New York and London: Bloomsbury Academic, 2013), 53.
39. The Kuhnian concept of ‘normal science’ can help us here—from a normal scientific perspective—which is that which is characterized by its practice being structured by the current body of scientific knowledge which function in the same way that the web of common beliefs function for Bachelard, as an obstacle to true science—anything that looks ‘new’ is automatically seen as anomalous and treated not as something new but rather as a mistake in the scientific process. See Thomas Kuhn, *The Structure of Scientific Revolutions* (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1996).
40. Bachelard, *The New Scientific Spirit*, translated by Arthur Goldhammer (Boston: Beacon Press, 1984), 12–13.
41. Ibid.
42. Ibid., 3.
43. Bachelard, *The Philosophy of No*, 9. My Emphasis.
44. Althusser, “Introduction: Unfinished History” in Dominique Lecourt, *Proletarian Science? The Case of Lysenko*, translated by Ben Brewster (New York: New Left Books, 1977), 14–15.
45. William Lewis, “Knowledge versus ‘Knowledge’: Louis Althusser on the Autonomy of Science and Philosophy from Ideology” in *Rethinking Marxism: A Journal of Economics Culture and Society*, Vol. 17, No. 3 (2005), 455–470, 459.
46. Ibid., 460.
47. See note 26.
48. William Lewis, *Louis Althusser and the Traditions of French Marxism*, 156.

49. See for instance Lewis, *Louis Althusser and the Traditions of French Marxism* (especially Chapters 6 and 7), Gregory Elliott's *Althusser: The Detour of Theory*, (Leiden: Brill, 2005), especially Chapter 4, and G.M. Goshgarian's introduction to *Louis Althusser: The Humanist Controversy*, edited by Francois Matheron, translated by G.M. Goshgarian (New York and London: Verso, 2003).
50. Althusser, "Letter to the Central Committee of the PCF, 18 March 1966, translated by William Lewis" in *Historical Materialism: Critical Research in Marxist Theory*, Vol. 15 (2007), 155.
51. *Ibid.*

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Adams, Ellen. *After the Rain: Surrealism and the Post- World War II Avant-Garde 1940–1950*. Published dissertation. New York University: Proquest Dissertations Publishing, 2007.
- Adereth, Maxwell. *The French Communist Party: A Critical History (1920–1984) from Comintern to "The Colors of France."* Manchester and Dover: Manchester University Press, 1984.
- Althusser, Louis. *For Marx*. Translated by Ben Brewster. New York and London: Verso, 2005.
- . "Letter to the Central Committee of the PCF, 18 March 1966. Translated by William Lewis" in *Historical Materialism: Critical Research in Marxist Theory*. Vol. 15 (2007). 153–172.
- . *Louis Althusser: The Humanist Controversy*. Edited by Francois Matheron, translated by G.M. Goshgarian. New York and London: Verso, 2003.
- . "Philosophy and Marxism" in *Philosophy of the Encounter: Later Writings 1978–1987*. Edited by Francious Matheron and Oliver Corpet, translated by G.M. Goshgarian. New York and London: Verso, 2006. 251–289.
- . "Philosophy as a Revolutionary Weapon" in *New Left Review*. Vol. 1, No. 64 (November–December 1970). 3–11.
- Bachelard, Gaston. *The New Scientific Spirit*. Translated by Arthur Goldhammer. Boston: Beacon Press, 1984.
- . *The Philosophy of No*. Translated by G.C. Waterston. New York: Orion Press, 1968.
- Camus, Albert. *The Rebel*. Translated by Anthony Bower. New York: Vintage, 1956.
- Derrida, Jacques. "Politics and Friendship: An Interview with Jacques Derrida" in *The Althusserian Legacy*. Edited by E. Ann. Kaplan and Michael Springer. London and New York: Verso, 1993. 183–232.
- Elliott, Gregory. *Althusser: The Detour of Theory*. Leiden: Brill, 2005.
- Eyers, Tom. *Post-Rationalism: Psychoanalysis, Epistemology, and Marxism in Post-War France*. New York and London: Bloomsbury Academic, 2013.
- Feuerbach, Ludwig. *The Essence of Christianity*. Translated by George Eliot. New York: Prometheus Books, 1989.
- Guiat, Cyrille. *The French and Italian Communist Parties: Comrades and Culture*. London and Portland: Frank Cass, 2003.
- Kuhn, Thomas. *The Structure of Scientific Revolutions*. Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1996.
- Lecourt, Dominique. *Proletarian Science? The Case of Lysenko*. Translated by Ben Brewster. London: New Left Books, 1977.
- Lewis, William. "Knowledge versus 'Knowledge': Louis Althusser on the Autonomy of Science and Philosophy from Ideology" in *Rethinking Marxism: A Journal of Economics Culture and Society*. Vol. 17, No. 3 (2005). 455–470.

- . *Louis Althusser and the Traditions of French Marxism*. Lanham: Lexington Books, 2005.
- Lyle, Louise. “Science Bourgeoise et Science Proletarienne: French Literary Responses to the Lysenko Affair” in *The Lost Decade?: The 1950s in European History, Politics, Society and Culture*. Edited by Heiko Feldner, Claire Gorrara, and Kevin Passmore. Newcastle: Cambridge Scholars Publishing, 2011. 213–229.
- Marx, Karl. “The Economic and Philosophic Manuscripts of 1844” and ‘Theses on Feuerbach’ in *The Marx Engels Reader 2nd Edition*. Edited by Robert C. Tucker. New York and London: Norton, 1978. 66–125.
- Utley, Gertje. *Picasso: The Communist Years*. New Haven and London: Yale University Press, 2000.

2 *En Media Res*

Althusser's Materialism, the Challenge to the PCF's Marxism, and the Rise of Anti-Humanism

In the opening pages of "The Humanist Controversy" Althusser relates an anecdote about his 1963 encounter with one of the then members of the Frankfurt School, Erich Fromm.¹ As the story goes, Dr. Adam Schaff, a friend of Althusser's, had met Fromm at a conference in the United States and in the course of their meeting, Fromm had mentioned to Schaff that he was in the process of putting together an edited collection of Marxist writings (which would eventually become the collection entitled *Socialist Humanism*).² At Schaff's insistence, Fromm wrote Althusser asking him to submit something for this collection. When Althusser expressed apprehension to Schaff about the possibility of Fromm accepting his work—saying that the title of the work led him to believe that it would be a "*Missa Solemnis in Humanism Major*"—his friend replied with this syllogism: "Every humanist is a Liberal, Fromm is a humanist; therefore, Fromm is a Liberal."³ Meaning, of course, that as a liberal, Fromm would not reject the paper simply because it went against his views, that he would allow the readership to determine for itself what to think. This is because, of course, as a 'liberal,' Fromm should have enough of a belief in the individual's autonomy and ability to use their own rationality to determine what to think. Fromm, however, rejected the article.

Althusser writes of this, that it confirmed his suspicion that "between Humanism and Liberalism on the one hand, and the conjuncture on the other, there existed something like . . . a non-accidental relation."⁴ The point of this remark, to put it briefly, is that Fromm and other humanist Marxists—including those within the PCF—fail to see that their humanism (and supposed liberalism) is itself an ideological interpretation of Marx's thought, one that is stuck in a particular and idealist ideology that Marx himself—according to Althusser—worked his way out of in his later work. Though directed at Fromm, this anecdote, as noted at the end of chapter one, also offers a nice encapsulation of Althusser's criticism of the PCF. In what follows, I will expand upon the brief discussion from chapter one of this critique and its lasting influence on the overall interpretation of Marx that Althusser develops.

I.

The core of Althusser's thought here is that there is ideology, and then there is Ideology (with a capital 'I'). The first sense of the word is the standard one; there are particular ideological forms that exist in particular times and in particular places throughout history. These operate in much of the standard ways that Marxists—including humanist Marxists and those connected to the PCF—have analyzed (as a kind of rationalizing, and propping up of the current existent modes of production such that those that exist within them come to see them as the Truth, as necessary, and as absolute). It is the second sense of the word, however, the capital 'I' Ideology that is particularly Althusserian. It is around this Althusser builds much of his critique: Ideology itself is as inescapable as it is ever present. As he points out in the essay that he had submitted to Fromm:

. . . Ideology is as such an organic part of every social totality. It is as if human societies could not survive without these specific formations, these systems of representations (at various levels), their ideologies. Human societies secrete ideology as the very element and atmosphere indispensable to their historical respiration and life.⁵

The humanist Marxist belief that one can escape ideology all together is challenged by Althusser, and it is this that is the mistake of the PCF's idealist materialism which, as the previous chapter explains, relies on what Lewis has aptly described as the Stalinist "two worlds" view in which the privileged epistemic position is given to the members of the working class in contrast to the ideological beliefs of the bourgeoisie.⁶ Here Althusser claims that ". . . only an ideological world outlook could have imagined societies *without ideology* and accepted the utopian idea of a world in which ideology (not just one of its historical forms) would disappear without a trace."⁷ We should recall once more in this context the Althusser's citation—in his introduction to Lecourt's text on Lysenko—of Marx's concern about the misuse of the dialectic, namely that it could be used to prop up the 'existing state of affairs' if one isn't careful.⁸ Althusser thinks that overcoming this particular ideology—the humanist ideology of the PCF and other humanist Marxists—means overcoming the young Marx's idealist belief in the end of history as a reconciliation of man with himself through the revolutionary activity of overcoming the false consciousness given to those that are oppressed by ideology.

As I noted in the previous chapter, Althusser's arguments about the split in Marx's work in connection with the Bachelardian conception of an 'epistemological break' in Marx's thinking are the ground of his critique of the Humanist Marxist view. That is, as we saw, Althusser argues that it is the scientific discovery of the method of historical materialism that allowed

Marx to see the Bachelardian ‘web of beliefs’ that conditioned his previous philosophical understanding of things—the result of the left-wing Hegelian thinking of Feuerbach’s humanism—as an error and thus made it possible for him to reject it as ideological. Further, it is out of this the Marx himself experiences the ‘new’—it is the scientific practice that Marx engages in that partially produces—or reproduces, Marx’s world. So, for Althusser’s Marx, it is a break with a given ideology that Marx’s science itself conditions, thus Marx becomes a true scientist (in the Bachelardian sense) in his rejection of humanism and this comes about through the scientific practice he engages in by developing the method of historical materialism.

To be sure, this does not mean, according to Althusser, that in the epistemological break Marx himself leaves all ideology behind. As just pointed out above, for Althusser, this is simply not a possibility. As Bachelard has taught us, ideology itself (in the form of the web of positive beliefs) is ever present even if and when particular ideologies are overcome. All knowledge that exists at any given time, including the epistemic position of the working class, is only provisional at best; if one were to take this as absolute fact, then they would lose the scientific perspective and fall completely back into the ideological. Returning to Althusser’s re-reading of Marx then, what Marx accomplishes in his move away from the humanism of his early work on Althusser’s account, is both the ability to reject the web of belief that conditioned his previous thought, and the beginnings of a new theory of the social.

Now that we can see the relationship between Bachelard’s philosophy of science, Althusser’s re-reading of Marx, and its importance for his rejection of the PCF’s Marxism, we should turn our eyes back to the concept of ideology that Althusser develops here and to the materialist position that emerges out of it, as this is crucial for both Badiou’s and Žižek’s materialist positions. As we will see in the next section if Althusser’s materialism is in part the result of his application of Bachelard’s philosophy of science and his concepts of the epistemological obstacle and the epistemological break, it is also in part due to his reading of Spinoza as a thinker who can offer an antidote to a kind of (bad) Hegelianism that infects other (humanist) readings of this concept.

I am, of course, not the first reader of Althusser in English to take note of Althusser’s employment of Spinoza in his reading of Marx. Perry Anderson’s 1976 *Considerations in Western Marxism* is an early example of such a recognition (even if it comes to a negative assessment of Althusser’s Spinozism) and there are many others.⁹ What I am interested in exploring here emerges (in part) out of a suggestion in a footnote of Peter Thomas’ 2002 essay entitled “Philosophical Strategies: Althusser and Spinoza.”¹⁰ There Thomas notes that there is still much research to be done into the similarity between Spinoza’s theory of the imagination and Althusser’s theory(s) of Ideology.

Caroline Williams has quite nicely mapped this relation as it appears in *Reading Capital* by mapping the similarities between Spinoza’s three levels of knowing and Althusser’s ‘generalities’ (I, II, III), and I refer readers to her

work on this particular element of the Althusser-Spinoza relation.¹¹ What I want to focus on instead—and this does seem to still be lacking in much of the secondary literature in English on this topic—is giving a close reading of some of Althusser’s discussions of ideology *in connection with* a close reading of some of Spinoza’s musings on the imagination and its role in our awareness and connection (or lack thereof) to our bodily (and hence material) existence, in hopes of better understanding the relation between Althusser and Spinoza on this topic.

II.

Ideology is, says Althusser, “a system (with its own logic and rigor) of representations (images, myths, ideas or concepts, depending on the case) endowed with a historical existence and role within a given society.”¹² The term ‘representation’ should be taken in a Kantian sense, as something that exists prior to belief—a representation is simply an intuition, an objective experience. Ideology then, as a ‘system of representations,’ is the experience of an objective world that is the background against which an individual comes to have beliefs about themselves and the nature of that world. A given ‘system of representations’ is, for Althusser, born of the particular arrangement of material social practices that exist at a given time in history. In other words, the ‘system of representations’ is nothing more than what makes up a given society itself. It is, as noted above, the background against which individuals become conscious of their existence and that which informs their understanding of themselves in relation to the world in which they find themselves. Furthermore, this ‘system of representations’ that is a given society is more than anything a structure (in the literal sense of the word—as that which ‘structures’ or holds together) that depicts one’s social world as a totality with a particular set of seemingly natural meanings, necessities, possibilities, institutions, and traditions. As Althusser goes on to point out, this seeming unity is “constituted by a certain specific type of complexity” and is “imposed on the vast majority of men, not via their ‘consciousness’” but rather, “via a process that escapes them.”¹³ Althusser continues:

Men ‘live’ their ideologies . . . *not as a form of consciousness, but as an object of their ‘world’*—as their ‘world’ itself . . . so ideology is a matter of the *lived* relation between men and their world. This relation only appears as ‘conscious’ on condition that it is *unconscious*, [and] in the same way only seems to be simple on condition that it is complex, that it is not a simple relation but a relation *between* relations, a second degree relation.¹⁴

There are, according to Althusser, first and foremost social relations. These are made up by any of the multitude of *materially* existing practices

found in a given society: the exchange of goods (economic relations), familial relations (relations between adult and child, and sibling to sibling, as well as particular familial traditions that contribute to the individual's understanding of themselves *vis-à-vis* other members of the family), governmental relations (forms of governing, judicial relations, and such), and there are other institutional relations such as schools and religious organizations. All of these social relations are very real, very existent and multifarious relations of which we are all a part at any given time (though they are contingent in that they differ at different historical places and times).

Each of these is constructed and sustained by a particular set of material practices. For example, physically going to church on Sunday is a material practice that helps sustain the Christian social relation as does bowing one's head to pray, the practice of physically exchanging money for goods sustains the current mode of economic relationships, the common practice of treating male children differently than female children sustains the existing gender differences, and so on. Consciousness, as Althusser points out in the quotation above, is the "relation between" these relations and it functions as a kind of "second degree relation." His point here is that this 'second degree' relation is the (paradoxically unconscious) *product* of all of these disparate relations and the practices that make them up. It holds them together and makes them appear to those that are subject to them as if they are natural, non-contingent, and necessary. Here Althusser writes:

All ideology represents in its necessarily imaginary distortion . . . above all the (imaginary) relationship of individuals to the relations of production and the relations that derive from them. What is represented in ideology is therefore not the system of real relations which govern the existence of individuals but the imaginary relation of those individuals to the real relations in which they live.¹⁵

The social relations (and their material practices) in this sense 'produce' the consciousness of the subject in such a way that she, in her 'imaginary' relationship to them, *consciously lives these relations as her world*, but this happens at a level that is below the level of her consciousness. It is, instead, the altogether unconscious production—through the material social relations (and relations of production) that she participates in—of her consciousness as her lived relation to the world. The claim that Althusser is making here is that consciousness itself—one's subjective awareness of oneself and one's world—is always already ideological (in this sense). Ideology is, then, produced by the real social relations, the material practices in which we are always enmeshed, but at the same time Ideology misrepresents these relations, that is, makes them appear as static, natural, and necessary.

As we have seen, both so far in this chapter and the last, traditionally, the concept of ideology is of a set of (mistaken) beliefs that a subject has about her world which can be overcome and somehow 'set right.' We have

seen also that for Althusser, this is an impoverished one. It neglects Ideology's fundamental role in our subjective awareness. Ideology is not simply something that we believe or are trapped in. It is rather something that we, as subjects, actively produce (and reproduce) in our engagement (our lived relation) with our world and material practices that form this engagement. The distortion that exists in Ideology is not, for Althusser, simple false belief about the world (as there is no real falsity of the beliefs themselves—they are simply that which emerges out of material practice), the distortion found in Ideology is that which arises from its inability to recognize its historical nature. Ideology *reproduces* its conditions and in doing so, denies access to both its status as historical and its nature as contingent. This is the 'imaginary' relation that is produced by Ideology. It is here, apropos the 'imaginary relation' that Ideological consciousness constitutes between the individual and her conditions, that Althusser's reading of Spinoza becomes relevant as it is—Althusser's reading of—Spinoza's understanding of the imagination that serves as the reference point.¹⁶

III.

Althusser most often appeals to the appendix of Part One of *The Ethics* when referring to the influence of Spinoza on his own theory of the imaginary.¹⁷ There Spinoza argues (as he does throughout Book One) that the idea that there is a final cause (a *Telos*) in nature is a strictly human invention, that we perceive things in nature from our human perspective and attribute things to it that simply do not inhere in the natural world. The *telos* that we see in nature is our own application for, as Spinoza argues, "this doctrine of Final Causes turns Nature completely upside-down, for it regards as an effect that which is fact a cause and vice versa. Again, it makes that which is by nature first to be last; and finally that which is highest and most perfect is held to be most imperfect."¹⁸

Spinoza's point here is that when we look to the world and see order and purpose, we commonly regard it as an *effect* of a hidden cause that exists in the natural world that grants that purposiveness to nature (like a creator God, who is both the origin and end of all that is, or simply the well-ordered purposiveness of nature itself); however, this 'effect' is itself a cause of humanity's mistaken belief in final causes. What we see as an effect of some final, well-ordered cause is not the effect of such a thing but rather that which causes in us the belief that there are such causes. Hence it is not human reason that is in control and truly comprehends its world when it recognizes purposiveness, but instead humanity's belief in such a *telos* is caused by its (necessarily) mistaken relationship to its existence. For Althusser's Spinoza, the necessarily mistaken relationship (and the teleological perspective that attends it) is the result, as Althusser argues, of the 'illusion of the subject' that Spinoza discerns.¹⁹

In order to make sense of Althusser's attribution of a theory of the subject (as an illusion) to Spinoza, we can recall that according to Spinoza, part of what it is to be human—in one's *lived* relationship to one's world—is to take oneself to be the center of action and to “act always with an end in view, to wit, the advantage that [we] seek.”²⁰ Because this is part of what it is to be human (as we *live* our humanity anyway), we come to think that other things in the world follow this same process (and like us, have themselves, goals and purposes for which they exist and act). When we encounter things that seem not have such purposes, we attribute them to a ‘divine’ intelligence that in fact does have a purpose in mind (one that we simply cannot comprehend). Because we (as humans) tend to look to things in nature as means to fulfilling our own purposes, we come to think that this divine intelligence has created nature to fulfill our needs that the natural world and its events have such a purpose. Here Spinoza writes:

When men became convinced that everything that is created is created on their behalf, they were bound to consider the most important quality in every individual thing that which was most useful to them, and to regard as of the highest excellence all those things by which they were most benefitted. Hence they came from these abstract notions to explain the natures of things: Good, Bad, Order, Confusion, Hot, Cold, Beauty, Ugliness; and since they believe that they are free, the following abstract notions came into being: Praise, Blame, Right, Wrong.²¹

It is in the space of these and other abstract notions that we form and place on the world, based on our own notions about what benefits us, that we come to consciousness both of ourselves, and the world in which we live. We (mistakenly) think that these notions are in fact *in* the world itself—as a natural part of it, stemming from its inherent purposiveness—rather than the result of a process of mystification that is inherent to our subjective awareness (and one who's particular content is ultimately determined not by us, but *is the effect of the world on us*). We do not see, according to Spinoza, that this is an effect of our ‘lived’—our conscious subjective—relationship to a world in which we find ourselves (an effect that is conditioned by causes that escape us because we take them to be effects themselves of the ‘purposiveness’ of nature). It is in this way that humans come, as Spinoza says, to “mistake their imagination for their intellect, they are firmly convinced that there is order in things, ignorant as they are of things and their own nature.”²² In other words, our lived/conscious/subjective relationship to our world is a mystification of the *real relations* that underlie and determine our subjective awareness. Spinoza continues:

It will suffice at this point if I take as my basis what must be universally admitted, that all men are born ignorant of the causes of things, that they have a desire to seek their own advantage, a desire of which

they are conscious. From this it follows that men believe they are free, precisely because they are conscious of their volitions and desires; yet concerning the causes that have determined them to desire and will, they have not the faintest idea, because they are ignorant of them.²³

It is here that Althusser, sees a nascent theory of ideology in Spinoza; one that excavates the connection between a subjectivity that is ideologically constructed, and a subjective belief in freedom, purposes, and teleology. As Althusser puts it, “Spinoza showed us the secret alliance between Subject and Goal.”²⁴ Furthermore, this (Spinozist) theory of ideology shows us how ideology is not simply a mistaken relation—in ideas—between the individual and the individual’s world (one that can be righted by a proper re-orientation of one’s awareness), but rather a theory of ideology that shows us how it is that one’s ideological consciousness is materially produced and materially invested through the practices in which one engages. Here Althusser writes:

Spinoza’s “theory” rejected every illusion about ideology . . . but at the same time it refused to treat ideology as a simple error, or as a naked ignorance, because it based the system of this imaginary phenomenon on the relation of men to the world “expressed” by the state of their bodies. This *materialism of the imaginary* opened a way to a surprising conception of the First Level of Knowledge: not at all, in fact, as a “piece of knowledge”, but as the material world of men as they live it, that of their concrete and historical existence.²⁵

For Althusser, Spinoza’s thought regarding subjectivity’s imaginary relationship to its world (and the purposes that it constructs in this relation) does not simply make an anthropological claim; that is, Spinoza (according to Althusser) is not simply saying that it is human nature to add purposes where there are none, but that *the ways* in which our subjective imaginary relation to our world are produced (and hence the kinds of purposes we come to see in the world) are themselves both historically and materially invested. Althusser realizes that this is an unorthodox reading of Spinoza, but as he points out, “to be a heretical Spinozist is almost orthodox Spinozism, if Spinoza can be one of the greatest lessons in heresy the world has ever seen!”²⁶ In other words, Althusser readily admits to using Spinoza for his purposes—he rejects, or at least ignores, the portions of Spinoza’s corpus in which Spinoza’s views about our imaginary relation to our world become anthropological, for instance—but it is still this heretical Spinoza whom inspires and grounds this portion of Althusser’s revision of ideology and the materialist doctrine that he constructs. For our purposes, it matters little whether or not Althusser gets Spinoza right, what we are interested in is making sense of Althusser’s claims to be a Spinozist and what that ultimately entails. Now that we have some sense for how Althusser uses Spinoza in making sense of his revision of the concept of ideology, I want

to briefly discuss the connection between this and the material nature of the imaginary in Spinoza.

Our own nature is, according to Spinoza, one that is determined to be as it is by forces that exist outside of us, forces that impinge not only on our bodily existence but our mental life as well. We as natural beings are a part of a larger whole that is Nature, and Nature (or God in Spinoza's parlance) is a giant mechanistic system of causes and effects. Furthermore, as is well known, according to Spinoza's strict anti-Cartesian parallelism, there is no real interaction between mind and body. They are rather, correlated (the mind 'expresses' or 'reflects' what happens in the body). As pointed out above, the body is, as a part of nature, subject to the forces exerted on it by other existing bodies and the events of which they are a part. Here, again, is Spinoza:

The human body is affected by other external bodies in a great many ways and is so structured that it can affect external bodies in a great many ways. *But the human mind must perceive all that happens in the human body . . .* The idea which constitutes the formal being of the human mind is the idea of the body.²⁷

There are two important points made in this quotation. First, since the individual human body is the kind of thing that it is, namely a physical entity that has the power to act—and is itself acted on by other bodies—it is not truly a singular entity, separate from all other bodies. We are, as Spinoza argues, “passive insofar as we are a part of nature which cannot be conceived independently of other parts.”²⁸ The ‘part’ that is my individual body, is not separate from other parts of Nature and is thereby tied to these other parts insofar as they act on me as causes (and are effects, which flow from my causal efficacy). Second, the mind is necessarily affected by the causal matrix and those external bodies that act on my body as it *must* perceive what happens to my body. This perception (of the external bodies that act on mine), however, is, as Spinoza goes on to argue, inadequate, incomplete, and distorted by the imagination (of which I have said quite a bit above):

When the human mind regards external bodies through the ideas of affections of its own body, we say that it imagines, and in no other way can the mind imagine external bodies as actually existing. Therefore, insofar as the mind imagines external bodies, it does not have adequate knowledge of them.²⁹

What we are as individuals is again, the result of the world in which we find ourselves and that which exists in it (materially) at the time that we come into the world. Our minds—that is our consciousness—are determined by our bodily existence, and our bodily existence is determined by

the particular set of (material) causes that impinge on it at a given point in history. These causes are both physical and social' there are historically existing social 'bodies,' or material 'institutions' in Althusser's parlance, that act on us as individuals and help construct our understanding of ourselves. Recall again the claims about the material and social practices in which we find ourselves in our world—it is through these practices and the beliefs that are constructed out of them that I come to understand both myself and my world (that I *live* my world). These practices both pre-exist my individual existence and are the material out of which I build my own knowledge of myself and the world in which I find myself. This 'social body' is that to which I am connected in a Spinozist fashion (both bodily and mentally, it forms the background against which I come to conscious awareness, and out of which I derive epistemic and conceptual material).

The imaginary relation that we have to the material substrate in which we are defined is for Spinoza a reversal of the proper order of things, as it is for Althusser—I imagine that I am both free in relation to this substrate (that I choose it), and that this material is simply the natural order of things, the way things fundamentally (and epistemologically) are. In my ideological imaginary, I miss the historical nature of both the material relations that exist and the conceptual (mental) knowledge that attends it, as well as my entrapment in, and construction by, that particular material constellation in which I find myself.

It is here again that we can see the importance of Spinoza's thought for Althusser's materialism. Not only do we get "an abstract theory of ideology" from Spinoza but further, Spinoza's thought represents a materialist anti-humanism *par excellence*. Consciousness on this reading, is nothing more than a 'second-degree' imaginary relation that has no existence of its own—it is not free from that which determines its awareness (at least not in its everyday existence)—it is an 'idea' of the body (which is itself determined by Nature, or the constellation of bodies in causal relations that exist at a given time), formed as it is as a result of those material causes that act on the body, and those causes can be (and are) seen in an Althusserian light, as including the historically constructed material practices and the material social institutions in which these practices are encased, which engage us and contribute to our conception of our world, and our conception of ourselves as a part of it. Again, we should be sure to note that this is Althusser's reading of Spinoza; it in no way claims to be the definitive reading of Spinoza. It is, as I have noted above (and as Althusser himself notes), a 'heretical' reading of Spinoza.

We now can turn back to some of the discussion of Althusser's claims about a split in Marx's thinking in order to further see how it is that Althusser conceives of the (Spinozist, or heretical Spinozist) connections between (material) body and mind, individual bodies and social bodies, and ultimately how this plays into his view of consciousness' ideological construction. Recall that, as we saw in the last chapter, the Althusserian claim

is that Marx's thought began in a particular ideology (that of a kind of Feuerbachianism). Althusser points out here that:

Marx did not choose to be born to the thought German history had concentrated in its university education, nor to think its ideological world. He grew up in this world, in it he learned to live and move . . . the young Marx emerged into the *thought world* of his own time, to think in it in his turn, and to enter into the exchange and debate with the thoughts of his time which was to be his whole life as an ideologue.³⁰

The key point to note in the passage above is the claim about the university education as a concentration of a particular way of thinking. This education is what made the young Marx what he was, according to Althusser. This is to say that it is the education, which produced the consciousness of the Young Marx. This educational apparatus is the 'material' out of which the Young Marx as thinker 'emerged.'³¹ The German university is, then, a material representative (a Spinozist social body) in which this knowledge had its life, and it is by being engaged by the practices involved in attending the German university (both physically and mentally) at the time, that Marx came to think the ways the he did in his youth. In this reading of Marx's development, we can see again Althusser's conception of the material-ideological construction of consciousness itself.

Consciousness is, as we have seen, the secondary relation, between the material relation, between the individual's body and causes that act on it. Consciousness as this 'secondary relation' is in fact a kind of ideological distortion but not as something that can be thrown off through a proper mode of critical awareness. It is rather a distortion—or a constitutive imaginary—that is necessary and constitutive of any consciousness whatsoever and one that is lived (and produced) in and by the very material practices that it embodies. This is the point that is being made when Althusser claims that: "*the category of the subject is constitutive of all ideology only insofar as all ideology has the function (which defines it) of 'constituting' concrete individuals as subjects.*"³² As ideological, consciousness is distorted because consciousness' knowledge (and its world) appears to it as natural, static, and non-historical. This ideological mode of awareness is only ever partially overcome in that ideology is never something that we can be rid of and new modes of ideology arise as old modes are overcome.³³ There is, then, a kind of symbiotic relationship between one's subjectivity and ideology: it is in ideology that the subject is constituted but at the same time it is the constituted subject that sustains (or reproduces) ideology. Althusser's theory of interpellation is meant to further explain this point.

One is 'interpellated' or 'hailed' by ideology when one recognizes himself as the 'subject' of its call or the one that is being hailed. Althusser's classic example here is of the policeman who hails a passerby on the street by saying "hey you there!" It is in the physical act of turning around and

responding to the hail that one becomes a 'subject' and is thus interpellated by the hail because as Althusser points out, "he has recognized that the hail was 'really' addressed to him, and that 'it was really him who was hailed' (and not someone else)."³⁴ We are, argues Althusser, always in a state of being interpellated in this way. By engaging in any material social practice we admit (unconsciously) that we are the 'subject' of such a practice and in doing this, we *become* the kind of subject that engages in that practice and thus are constituted by it. For instance, by engaging in the practice of taking one's comprehensive exam in order to move on to the next level in progress toward gaining a doctorate, one recognizes oneself as the kind of being who takes such an exam; this is to say, one responds to the hail of that particular practice with a 'yes, that is me!' In doing this, one becomes interpellated as a particular kind of subject, and at the same time, one sustains not just the practice of comprehensive exams, but also the entire network of practices that surround the institution of the university. Thus, one is both interpellated as a subject by the ideological 'apparatus' of the university and in the recognition of oneself as the kind of being that responds to such a hail with a "yes, that is me," one props up the apparatus itself (and consequently many other social apparatuses that are linked to such an institution).

This, as we should be able to see now, is a process that is always happening; I am always being interpellated by the social practices that I engage in thus I am always already the subject of ideology. When I go to the grocery store, I am interpellated by the ideological practices that I engage in while I am there—politeness, using a shopping cart or basket, paying for my food, etc.—and I generally (unconsciously) respond to this interpellative process with the recognition of myself in such practices. When I am driving and I accidentally blow a stop sign, I find myself interpellated as a subject who is guilty (even when there is no one around to catch me—it is enough that I feel that moment of fear as I look to see if there is a policeman lurking anywhere) and I recognize myself as such. We should keep in mind that in all of this, my recognition of myself as the subject of ideology is not just the recognition of myself as such a subject at that moment. Rather, in my constitutive imaginary I recognize—or misrecognize—myself as always having been such a subject. This is an important point not to be missed; when I am interpellated and I recognize myself as the one being hailed, part and parcel of the recognition is the misrecognition that I have *always-already* been that subject that is subjected to such practices and is beholden to them.

In this way, as Althusser points out, "Ideology has always-already interpellated individuals as subjects, which amounts to making it clear that individuals are always-already interpellated by ideology as subjects, which necessarily leads us to one last proposition: *individuals are always already subjects.*"³⁵ Not only is it the case that because we are constantly in a process of being interpellated, we are always already subjects; Althusser also argues that though ideological practices may differ at different historical times and places, *the structure of interpellation is ever present.* This is what

is meant by his claim that “Ideology has no history.”³⁶ Our preceding discussion of Althusser’s reading of Spinoza should help make sense of this claim; we always find ourselves in an ideological/imaginary relation to our world (in our conscious lived existence) in which we take ourselves to be free beings, but that conscious existence is, in reality, the result of the material/external causes that act on and interpellate us as the beings that we come to take ourselves to be. We always find ourselves interpellated as subjects by some grouping of social relations and the practices which make them up (apparatuses in Althusser’s terminology) and while these change as history changes, the process of our constitution by them—and the constitutive imaginary itself as the lived relationship to the world—remains stable.

We should, however, be careful in using the word ‘structure’ here, as it smacks of the accusations that continue to be leveled at the Althusserian project that it is nothing more than a kind of structuralist Marxism, accusations that Althusser himself thinks are false and miss the importance of Spinoza in his thought. Althusser defends himself against the charge of structuralism by citing his Spinozism: “If we never were structuralists, we can now explain why: Why we seemed to be, even though we were not, why there came about this strange misunderstanding on the basis of which books were written. We were guilty of an equally powerful and compromising passion: *we were Spinozists*.”³⁷ We are now in a position to see what he means in making this claim and how he thinks what he is doing is not structuralist, or at least not simply structuralism as applied to Marxism. Furthermore, a discussion of this will illuminate, for us, the question which has remained in the background until now: what role the claim to contingency plays in Althusser’s materialism and why it is so important.

IV.

The standard way of understanding the Althusserian position of anti-humanism, is by reading it in relation to the structuralist movement underway in the 1950s and 1960s in much of the intellectual scene in both France and on the continent more generally.³⁸ We might, however, challenge this view by thinking through the implications of the foregoing. If it is the case that Althusser draws the inspiration for his particular brand of Marxist anti-humanism from the likes of Bachelardian philosophy of science, backed up by a novel reading of Spinoza’s materialism, then it seems that, as he himself has repeatedly tried to point out, his own brand of anti-humanism cannot simply be reduced to a kind of structuralism. As Warren Montag tells us, Althusser began a serious study of structuralism as early as the academic year 1962–1963, in which he gave a year-long seminar on the subject.³⁹ Among the students that participated in this seminar were Pierre Macherey, Etienne Balibar, and Jacques Ranciere. Each of these students produced works out of this seminar that were critical of structuralism in a variety of ways.⁴⁰ It is

also during this year that the foundations for Althusser's own criticisms of, and attempts to distance himself from, the structuralist movement were laid.

To begin to make sense of this criticism (and its foundations), we should recall our discussion of Bachelard. According to Bachelard, the proper scientific attitude is the one that remains open, that rejects the seemingly settled nature of scientific 'fact,' that seeks to "disrupt the habits of objective knowledge and make reason uneasy."⁴¹ This, as we have seen, is because, as Bachelard points out, 'objective' knowledge is always in a certain sense ideological, and forms an 'epistemological obstacle' to proper scientific practice. Therefore, since our very subjective awareness is first conditioned by a knowing that is taken to be objective (and hence is itself, conditioned by these epistemological obstacles), Bachelard argues that "we must constantly strive towards a desubjectification" in order to gain access to the 'new' in science.⁴² That is, we must continually interrogate this subjective awareness (and its attendant conceptual schemes) as it always harbors ideological potential.

Though structuralism itself gives one the philosophical tools to effect such a desubjectification and hence to think the outside of the human 'subject' as that which determines (rather than is determined by), it has its own problems. First, structuralism itself merely displaces the category of 'subject' from the individual human to the structure, and second, in doing so, the concept of 'structure' becomes ideological insofar as it becomes a part of 'objective' science and, thus, objective knowledge. Thereby the concept of 'structure' remains uninterrogated by those who make use of it. As we are now in a position to begin to see, structuralism itself—when treated as a philosophical movement—is both idealist and ideological in its purported claims to be the 'right' or 'correct' (non-historical) way to understand social existence. To put it in Bachelardian parlance, Althusser's main charge against 'structuralism' is that it had (in his time) become an ideological 'epistemological obstacle' in the theoretical pursuits of his contemporaries (and in his own early work as well).⁴³

Here Althusser writes that we must remember that "structuralism [is] born of theoretical problems encountered by scientists in their practical work (in linguistics from the time of Saussure, in social anthropology from the time of Boas and Levi-Strauss, in psychoanalysis, etc.)."⁴⁴ Thus it is (like any scientific practice) a historically situated theoretical phenomenon, born of a particular conjunctural set of problems and questions. Furthermore, Structuralism is not a unified body of theory, with a unified conceptual apparatus, but rather "a jumble of vague themes that only realizes its ultimate tendency under certain definite conditions."⁴⁵ This is to say again, that there is no 'Structuralism' but rather certain structuralisms that are responses to *particular* problems and questions that arise in a given conjuncture or historical moment. To treat these structuralisms in any other way, for instance, as *the* way to understand social phenomena (which as we have already noted, Althusser thinks many of its own practitioners do) is to turn structuralism into a traditional philosophy, to neglect its historical nature as

an epistemological phenomena, to neglect the specificity of its existence and arrival on the scene. This is to make it ideological and non-scientific.

Althusser makes this point in his criticism of Levi-Strauss' structuralist account of social phenomena such as kinship, which he claims vacillates between two mistaken positions: the first is that of a bad (or ideological) formalism in which kinship structures are the material 'incarnation' of a 'logical principle' found in the 'human spirit' or the structure of the brain as such—he calls this Levi-Strauss' "materialist side, which combines a binary linguistic approach with a cybernetic conception of the human brain."⁴⁶ The problem here is that this brand of materialism assumes a static human nature (or 'Spirit') *vis-à-vis* logical/mental structures that are expressed in various ways in differing groups. In asserting this, Althusser is thinking of passages in Levi-Strauss such as the one in which he, in the midst of attempting to account for the existence, and common roots of, differing social practices appeals to the (non-historical) notion of a structure of the human mind. Here is one example of such a passage, in which Levi-Strauss is attempting to make sense of the existence of "dual organization" structures of social phenomena:⁴⁷

Dual organization is not in the first place an institution . . . It is above all a principle of organization, capable of widely varying, and in particular, of more or less elaborated applications. In some cases the principle applies only to sporting competition. In others it extends to political life . . . in others again, to religious and ceremonial life. Finally, it may extend to the marriage system. In all of these forms, there is a difference in degree, not of kind; of generality and not of type. *To understand their common basis, inquiry must be directed to certain fundamental structures of the human mind, rather than to some privileged region of the world or to a certain period in the history of civilization.*⁴⁸

The second mistaken position according to Althusser is that of a kind of functionalism. To this he writes:

If [according to Levi-Strauss] certain rules governing marriage and so forth exist in primitive societies, it is so *that* these societies can live, survive, and so on. (a functionalist biologist subjectivism: there is a 'social unconscious' which ensures exactly as an acute intelligence would, that primitive society possesses the means it needs to live and survive. Just as one must criticize this functionalism, which on the theoretical plane, invariably takes the form of a subjectivism which confers upon 'society' a form of existence of a subject endowed with intentions and goals, one must criticize and reject the concept of the *unconscious*, its indispensable correlative, of which Levi-Strauss is compelled to make liberal use. I would go so far as to say that the concept of the unconscious is no more a scientific concept in psychoanalysis than in sociology, or anthropology or history . . .)⁴⁹

To be sure, Althusser does not mean that we should reject the concept of the unconscious altogether, he cannot mean this, as he makes extensive use of this concept himself (as we have seen in the foregoing). The concept of a 'social unconscious' that Althusser accuses Levi-Strauss of making use of (and thus falling into functionalism) is, of course, a Durkheimian one (though for Durkheim, this is called a 'collective consciousness,' not a 'social unconscious'). It is certainly something that Levi-Strauss is aware of and builds his theory out of, but it is also something which Althusser himself is both aware of and, at times, is also indebted to. I wish to look primarily at this second criticism of Levi-Strauss and structuralism (though we will have brief reasons to return to the first problem posed for Levi-Strauss by Althusser), as it is here that we can best see how Althusser seeks to distance himself from it and ultimately gain further insight into how Althusser's own project attempts to avoid such a problem.

V.

We should begin by looking a bit further at both Levi-Strauss' and Althusser's debt to Durkheim. The Durkheimian concept of a 'collective consciousness' is drawn in distinction from that of individual consciousness, and it is this collective consciousness (or the social consciousness) that is to be studied when seeking an account of social existence. As Stephen Turner has pointed out, according to Durkheim, "the form of consciousness is determined by its content, and the content of collective consciousness differs from the that of individual consciousness."⁵⁰ This is to say that the Durkheimian model of social analysis rejects the subjective viewpoints of individuals in a given society as offering a valid account of social life. A proper understanding of social life comes from the rules and laws that act as unconscious determinants of the forms of consciousness that individuals in a given society come to have. This conception of social existence is very influential for both Althusser's account of the conscious life of individuals—think here of the theory of interpellation described above; it is the 'social consciousness' and its rules that form the background against which individuals come to awareness and through which they become recognizable to both themselves and others as members of a society—and Levi-Strauss' studies of kinship relations and mythologies, in which, as Turner shows us, Levi-Strauss "present(s) the view that these collectively shared practices . . . must be seen as complex systems of signification, with sets of rules, or 'logics,' of their own, which it is the task of the sociologist and anthropologist to decipher."⁵¹ Unlike both Levi-Strauss and Althusser, however, Durkheim thought that deciphering these social 'logics' meant coming to understand the underlying causal laws that formed the relations between individuals, their practices, and the 'social consciousness.' Neither Levi-Strauss nor Althusser hold

this view of the proper mode of explaining social phenomena. As Turner points out elsewhere:

For Levi-Strauss, the 'causal law' explanatory conception is replaced by a very different view . . . [For Levi-Strauss] to explain is to discover an order of relations that turns a set of bits, which have limited significance on their own, into an intelligible whole. This order may be termed 'the structure'. It is only when considered as a whole that the structure is intelligible . . .⁵²

In other words, taking the Durkheimian approach and looking for causal connections misses the complexity that is truly explanatory of social phenomena because it limits itself to the conceptual apparatus of causality. Rather, one must come to understand the relations that exist between social phenomena, such as social practices, that form the structural whole and can explain their existence and role in a given society—so, here causality matters little in scientific explanation, one must first understand relationality. Something similar could be said about the Althusserian project. Recall our earlier characterization of consciousness as a 'relation between relations.'⁵³ For Althusser, like Levi-Strauss, what matters for proper social explanation is a proper understanding of the (structural) relations between various practices that make up a social structure. The Althusserian critique of Levi-Strauss is, as noted above, that Levi-Strauss (and hence structuralism as a movement) goes wrong when he/it becomes insufficiently aware of the fact that the 'structured whole' that structuralism seeks to describe is not a unified whole 'endowed with a conscious existence' for which the relations that make up a given structure exist, and which is perpetuated (read: benefits) by these relations (hence the worry about a kind of functionalism creeping into the account). For this we can return to Althusser's Spinoza.

Thinking of the Spinozist conception of consciousness itself as conditioned by the imaginary relation between itself and that of which it is conscious (and the materialism which is called into existence by this view, that is the materialism of the conditioning of mind by the body and the individual body, by that of other bodies which are themselves connected to all other causes that exist in nature) we can begin to see just how it is that Althusser's materialism is both an anti-humanism and attempts to avoid the more problematic aspects of structuralism: Though, as we have seen, it posits the conscious world of the human as a world that results from the coming together of a select grouping of elements, the elements of the materially existing bodily practices in which we engage (or rather by which we are engaged and so constituted); it categorically refuses to attribute a telos—even an immanent one—to the existence of what is. There is no 'social subject' doing the determining or being benefitted by the existence and grouping of a set of practices for Althusser, the concept of a social subject itself is a historico-ideological one. We can see this point and how it relates to his Spinozism by

making a detour through Althusser's conception of the discipline of history (and his critique of a certain type of history).

Althusser argues that there are two types (or 'modes' in his parlance) of historical investigation. The first is what he calls "the History of the traditional historians," and it is in this category that he places Levi-Strauss' ethnological research. Those who practice this type of history:

. . . Talk about 'laws' of history because they consider only the accomplished fact of past history. History, in this case, presents itself as a wholly static object all of whose determinations can be studied like those of a physical object; it is an object that is dead because it is past.⁵⁴

This form of history is one that Althusser terms ideological. It is ideological because it is unaware that those 'laws' that the historian (or ethnologist) discerns in her investigations and to which she subjects that historical analysis are themselves imposed on her object (her historical research)—and on her subjective awareness itself—as identifiable laws by the given conjuncture of which *she* is a part—they are not the 'laws' that the particular historical object that she studies existed under. They are her 'laws,' only discernable in her time, and resulting from the material substrate that contributes to her conscious awareness. These 'laws' are retroactively read into the history that the historian investigates and attempts to account for.

To recognize this is to do a second kind of history according to Althusser, the kind of history that Althusser terms *Geschichte*, which as he describes it, "designates not an accomplished history, but a history in the present [*au présent*]." ⁵⁵ Those who practice history *au présent* recognize that their historical research and its insights is determined by their own conjuncture—by the historical time and place in which they live and out of whose material the historian is created (that is, she does not think that she is uncovering origins or eternal truths—to think this is to remain trapped in Ideology). Further defining the conditions of a given moment or conjuncture Althusser continues:

It is necessary to bear in mind that 'conjuncture' means 'conjunction', that is, an aleatory encounter of elements—in part, existing elements, but also unforeseeable elements. Every conjuncture is a singular case, as are all historical individualities, as is everything that exists.⁵⁶

One way of making sense of the claims made here about the aleatory nature of a given conjuncture (and hence the contingent nature of a given 'historical law' that is allegedly discerned by practitioners of the first kind of history, Levi-Strauss included) is to look to Althusser's critique of Hegel's system as in it we see the foundations of the point that is being made here.⁵⁷

As Althusser understands it, Hegel's version of a dialectical history relies on a conception of historical creation and change as explained by the

existence of one ‘simple’ contradiction. For Hegel (according to Althusser) the dialectical motor of history is contradiction—the contradiction between consciousness’ “sensuous existence and its knowledge.”⁵⁸ What drives both the given existence of particular social formations and their mutation and change is the contradiction that arises between a given individual’s (and a given culture’s) understanding or self-concept and the way that that self-concept plays itself out in that individual’s/culture’s lived expression of that awareness. To put the point briefly (and perhaps a bit roughly), on Hegel’s conception of history, particular historical individuals come into the world as members of particular societies that have particular sets of ideals through which they understand themselves and their world and in accord with which they seek to define themselves. In the actual putting into practice of such ideals, these individuals and societies come to understand the real meaning of them, and it is often the case that there is a contradiction that emerges between the social ideal that individuals seek to embody and the ideals themselves as they become materialized, or get lived in that social world.

As noted above, on this reading of Hegel’s account of things, it is usually one fundamental contradiction that defines and gives body to a given social formation. Coming to consciousness of that given contradiction is to come to consciousness of the real meaning of that ideal in its fully objective existence—which is ultimately to change one’s conscious awareness. This change, then, in turn affects the whole of society as it attempts to come to terms with the contradiction that it experiences. Althusser cites Hegel’s understanding of the emergence (and downfall) of Roman society as an example of this theory:

Rome: its mighty history, its institutions, its crises and ventures, are nothing but the temporal manifestation of the internal principle of the *abstract legal personality*, and then its destruction. Of course, this internal principle contains *as echoes* the principle of each of the historical formations it has superseded, but as echoes of itself—that is why it too has only one centre, the centre of all the past worlds conserved in its memory; that is why it is *simple*.⁵⁹

Hegel reduces a complex history to the existence of one principle, one ‘law’ that determines and defines all of the complexity. According to Althusser, the problem here is that Hegel’s analysis yields a simple teleological principle and this is presented as a necessary development. Again we encounter an idealism (an ideology). This idealism, however, is one that is conditioned by a misrecognition of historical analysis; it is a doing of history that thinks it is identifying objective explanatory historical tendencies and structures but is in fact, only identifying history as it is in the present, or was, in Hegel’s present, at his conjuncture, from within his given historical moment. A moment in which the identification of the ‘simple’ principle of development and change (the abstract legal persona) was identified (and identifiable) and retro-actively

posited as the guiding principle of historical creation and change. In other words, the mistake that Hegel makes here is the same mistake that humanist Marxists, like Fromm and the positions offered by the PCF, make in reading the early Marx and the late Marx as offering the same theoretical position: they (both Hegel and the humanist Marxists) stand at the end of a particular historical development and read the end back into the beginning, retroactively conferring a unified development from origin to end on a subject that does not in itself have such a teleological principle.

On an Althusserian account of things, Hegel's given conjuncture (or the given conjuncture of the humanist Marxists), as is the case with any given conjuncture, and the 'law' that becomes identifiable within it, however, was/is itself overdetermined by a number of factors that are not reducible to a simple principle or a simple contradiction; rather, as Althusser argues, a given conjuncture is made up of a "vast accumulation of contradictions . . . some of which are radically heterogeneous—of different origins, different sense, different levels and points of application—but nevertheless merge into a ruptural unity" and form the background conceptual/material apparatus that the historian uses to make sense of the past.⁶⁰ Furthermore, to read the problematic of a given conjuncture back into a past conjuncture is to misrecognize the heterogeneity of contradictions that exist at any given time, the radical contingency of the particular combination of elements that come together to make up a given conjuncture, and the discontinuous and ruptural nature of historical development itself. This is also the problem that exists for a Levi-Straussian, and more generally, a structuralist, account of social phenomena—in making such claims, Levi-Strauss runs the risk of retroactively positing an objective and ahistorical 'law' of social organization, one that becomes identifiable as a 'law' in his own conjuncture, namely the 'law' of 'structure' to exist and determine the social space, and one that comes to have the status of a kind of non-historical scientific 'truth.'

As noted earlier, Althusser gave a year-long seminar on structuralism in 1961–1962. Out of it came Pierre Macherey's first publication, a piece on Canguilhem's philosophy of Science called, "Georges Canguilhem's Philosophy of Science: Epistemology and the History of Science."⁶¹ Althusser wrote a short forward to it for its publication. Why this is important is that in the piece, Macherey makes the same argument (via Canguilhem) about contemporary views of the history of science that Althusser makes above in relation to history more generally: that they always see a *telos* retrospectively in the 'progress' of the sciences, that this ultimately comes from a present view implanting the progressive story in the history. Macherey here cites Canguilhem's study of the concept of 'reflex' wherein Canguilhem debunks the claims by historians of science that Descartes had a theory of the reflex that was later worked out by the progress of the sciences (the progress of reason). Rather the basic claim is that this (and other scientific concepts) are invested with ideological components (think again here of Bachelard's web of beliefs) and through (proper) scientific practice they become disburdened

of their (conjunctural) ideological components: but this process radically changes the content of the concepts themselves such that they come to have radically different content (so, the concept of 'reflex' in Descartes is not the same as the concept of 'reflex' in the biological sciences of the late 1950s early 1960s in Canguilhem's example, but we fail to see this from our perspective). Once generated, these 'new' concepts become ideologically (and materially) invested with contemporary-conjunctural ideological components (hence the problems with the histories that are written of the sciences: we tend to apply our ideologically invested concepts to those that existed in the past and see continuity wherein there is none if we look carefully). How do these arguments help us in making sense of the grounds upon which Althusser attempts to distance himself from structuralism? In his introduction to the original publication of Macherey's paper, Althusser writes that Canguilhem's work (as interpreted by Macherey) shows us:

. . . A new [conception] of history, which above all, abandons the old *idealist* schema of a continuous mechanistic or dialectical progress, without breaks, paradoxes, set backs, or leaps forward. [Here] a new history appears: that of the becoming of reason which is scientific but is stripped of this reassuring idealistic simplicity, which just as kindness is never forgotten but always finds its reward, ensured that a scientific question never remains without a response, but always finds its response. Reality has a little more imagination: there are imaginary responses which leave the real problems they evade without a true response, there are sciences which are called sciences and are only the scientific imposture of a social ideology.⁶²

Both Macherey's paper and Althusser's comments in his introduction to the paper coupled with his view of the discipline of history more generally show the "method" that Althusser and his students were attempting to employ at this time, and it is in the method that we can see the critique. If we think back to the Spinozist/Bachelardian (and now Canguilhemian/Machereyan) claims that science (properly practiced) gets us to realize that all knowledge is provisional at best, never complete or completely static/accurate, that is always harbors some ideological components and is always tied to its times (its conjuncture) and the material available to it—to believe otherwise is to fall into ideology, then those that practice structuralism without this critical/scientific awareness remain trapped in structuralist ideology—the concept of structure now serves as the ideological concept that explains the existence of social phenomena. When Althusser critiques Levi-Strauss, he accuses him of misunderstanding the concept of ideology at same time that he makes the arguments cited above.⁶³ It is this that he is worried about when Althusser makes this accusation, that 'structure' is supposed to explain the existence of ideology (conceived of as kinship relations and the like) for Levi-Strauss but the concept of structure is itself

ideologically invested in the current conjuncture and remains (at least in Althusser's time) immune to proper scientific awareness.

For Althusser, as we can now begin to see, in any given conjuncture, there is simply what is, the particular conjectural set of social relations that come together at a particular time and out of which a particular *lebenswelt* is born. Here he returns to Spinoza and writes:

Now I thought that Spinoza could consider every singularity, including that which took place in the *lebenswelt* of the imagination, as universal singular individuality, as a *case*, almost in the sense in which the Wittgenstein of the *Tractatus* writes, "*Die Welt ist alles was der Fall ist*," an untranslatable sentence, but one that more or less means "the world is everything that is the case." What is the case if not that which comes to pass, if not purely and simply that which "befalls," as if by accident, that is, without origin or end? That which befalls in existence and in being, in the world constituted by similar "falls," by similar "cases," to infinity.⁶⁴

Recall again the claims made above in relation to Spinoza (in relation to Althusser's 'heretical' reading of Spinoza): for Spinoza, what is, is as it is as a result of the causes that bring that which is into existence. These causes are not teleological, that is, they are not the result of an intentionality which attempts to achieve goals—they are mechanistic/naturalistic causes. Our minds (our imaginary relationship to our world) are caused to be as they are by our material bodily relations, which are themselves connected to other bodies which are themselves connected to this larger mechanistic causality with all of its aleatory contributions to our existence both as individuals and as societies. We might say here—sketchily—that Althusser's materialism is then an attempt, as he says, to think the radical contingency of necessity in that what it strives to do is remain open to the non-necessity of facts and particular theoretical enterprises in the sciences for understanding social phenomena (in a Bachelardian/Spinozist sense)—that is not get stuck in ideology (by rejecting both origins and ends) while at the same time admitting that there are certain 'necessary' features of a given particular social formation that make up its quasi-universal nature. These necessary features are made up of the multitude of material practices that condition the ideological awareness of those living in that social formation.

This universality, however, is singular in the sense that it arrives on the scene as a singular result of the contingent and aleatory nature of the particular combination of elements (practices) that combine at that time (thus it is a 'case' in the sense alluded to above). This 'universality,' moreover, is not one 'concrete universal' in the Hegelian sense of the term, that makes up a part of a larger process unfolding in history, it is completely and utterly singular in its contingent nature; and further, this universality is itself only existent in the elements that make it up (and the elements themselves are what they are as a result of the same contingency). That is, it

has no existence of its own; it emerges, as we do, *en medias res*. It is here, however, that Althusser backs himself into a corner. The distinction that he wants to maintain between science and ideology collapses under the weight of his theorization of the nature of science itself via his critique of the PCF's 'two worlds' understanding of Marxist science: if all science or scientific 'truth' is conjunctural and historical, then it seems that we have a simple relativism; we have no way of pulling the non-ideological true from the ideological and holding it apart in such a way as to fully overcome the ideological. As Althusser himself argues:

. . . We know that there is no *pure* theoretical practice, no perfectly transparent science which throughout history as a science will always be preserved, by I know not what Grace, from the taints of idealism, that is, of the ideologies which besiege it; we know that 'pure' science only exists on condition that it continually frees itself from the ideology which occupies it, haunts it, or lies in wait for it. The inevitable price of this purification and liberation is a continuous struggle with ideology itself, that is, against idealism . . .⁶⁵

Now that we see the problem that arises for Althusser, we can in the next chapter, turn to the thought of Alain Badiou and begin to look at the ways in which Badiou's theory emerges out of Althusser's and, at least in part, attempts to offer a solution to the problem we are left with in relation to it.

NOTES

1. Louis Althusser, "The Humanist Controversy" in *Louis Althusser: The Humanist Controversy and Other Writings*, edited by Francois Matheron, translated by G.M. Goshgarian (New York and London: Verso, 2003), 221–306.
2. See Erich Fromm ed., *Socialist Humanism* (New York: Anchor Books, 1966).
3. Althusser, *The Humanist Controversy*, 223.
4. *Ibid.*, 224.
5. Althusser, *For Marx*, translated by Ben Brewster (New York: Penguin, 1969), 232.
6. William Lewis, *Louis Althusser and the Traditions of French Marxism* (New York: Lexington Books, 2005), 63.
7. Althusser, *For Marx*, 232.
8. Althusser, "Introduction: Unfinished History" in *Proletarian Science*, Dominique Lecourt (London: New Left Books, 1977), 14–15.
9. See Perry Anderson, *Considerations in Western Marxism* (New York and London: Verso, 1976), Warren Montag, *Bodies, Masses, Power: Spinoza and His Contemporaries* (New York and London: Verso, 1999) and more recently, *Althusser and His Contemporaries: Philosophy's Perpetual War* (Bloomington: Duke University Press, 2013), Peter Thomas, "Philosophical Strategies: Althusser and Spinoza" in *Historical Materialism*, Vol. 10, No. 3 (2002), 71–113, Gregory Elliott, *Althusser: The Detour of Theory* (Leiden: Brill, 2005), and also the collection, *Encountering Althusser: Politics and Materialism in Contemporary Radical Thought*, edited by Katja Diefenbach, Sara R. Farris, Gal Kirn, and Peter Thomas (London: Bloomsbury, 2012).

10. Peter Thomas, "Philosophical Strategies: Althusser and Spinoza" in *Historical Materialism*, Vol. 10, No. 3 (2002), 71–113.
11. See Caroline Williams, "Ideology and the Imaginary" in *Ideology After Post-structuralism*, edited by Sinisa Malesevic and Iain MacKenzie (London: Pluto Press, 2002), 28–42.
12. Althusser, *For Marx*, 231.
13. *Ibid.*, 231, 233.
14. *Ibid.*
15. Althusser, "Ideology and Ideological State Apparatuses (Notes towards an Investigation)" reprinted in *Mapping Ideology*, edited by Slavoj Žižek (New York and London: Verso, 1994), 125.
16. It should be pointed out here that it is not simply in relation to Spinoza that Althusser cultivates a theory of the imagination, it is also the case that his understanding of this is influenced by his many correspondences with and reading of Jacques Lacan's concept of the imagination. It is, however, the case that Althusser himself cites Spinoza as his inspiration for this (rather than Lacan) and that in the end it does seem that Spinoza's understanding of this is closer to Althusser's. For a good discussion of this difference, see Caroline Williams, *Contemporary French Philosophy: Modernity and the Persistence of the Subject* (London and New York: Continuum, 2001), especially chapters 2 and 3.
17. See, for instance, Althusser, *Essays in Self-Criticism*, translated by Grahame Lock (New York: New Left Books, 1976), 135–141. And the late essay, "The Only Materialist Tradition: Spinoza" in *The New Spinoza (Theory out of Bounds)*, edited by Warren Montag and Ted Stolze (Minneapolis: University of Minnesota Press, 2008), 3–18.
18. Baruch Spinoza, *The Ethics, Treatise on the Emendation of the Intellect, and Selected Letters*, translated by Sam Shirley, edited by Seymour Feldman (Indianapolis and Cambridge, 1992), 59.
19. Althusser, *Essays in Self-Criticism*, 135.
20. Spinoza, *The Ethics*. 57.
21. *Ibid.*, 60.
22. *Ibid.*
23. *Ibid.*, 57 my emphasis.
24. Althusser, *Essays in Self-Criticism*, 136–137.
25. *Ibid.*, 136.
26. *Ibid.*, 132.
27. Spinoza, *The Ethics*, 76 my emphasis.
28. *Ibid.*, 156.
29. *Ibid.*, 83.
30. Althusser, *For Marx*, 64 emphasis in the original.
31. Of course, it is not the only material; it is part of a larger social structure that was made up of many material apparatuses and practices in which the educational apparatus in its given state was enmeshed.
32. Althusser, "Ideology and Ideological State Apparatuses," *Mapping Ideology*, 129 (emphasis in the original text).
33. Again—this is what we learn from Bachelard—we can, as scientists, overcome portions of the 'web' of positive beliefs through scientific practice, but in doing so, we replace portions of that web with other beliefs that can come to function in an ideological fashion.
34. *Ibid.*, 131.
35. *Ibid.*, 132.
36. *Ibid.* 120.
37. Althusser, *Essays in Self-Criticism*, 132.
38. See, for example, Ted Benton, *The Rise and Fall of Structural Marxism: Althusser and his Influence* (New York: St. Martin's Press, 1984).

39. See Warren Montag's introduction his edited collection of Macherey's work, entitled *In a Materialist Way*, translated by Ted Stolze (New York and London: Verso, 1998), especially 4–7.
40. I will look at specifically at some of Macherey's work in this regard below.
41. Bachelard, *The Formation of Scientific Mind*, translated by Mary McAllester Jones (Manchester: Clinamen Press, 2002), 245.
42. *Ibid.*, 246.
43. Althusser, thus, uses his own philosophical method to interrogate and critique his earlier philosophical positions. This is the general project of his *Essays in Self-Criticism*.
44. Althusser, *Essays in Self-Criticism*, 128–129. Montag notes that this critique was founded in the seminar referred to above (much earlier than it was published here). See Montag, "Introduction," in Macherey, *In a Materialist Way*, 4.
45. *Ibid.*
46. Althusser, *The Humanist Controversy*, 25–26.
47. A Dual Organization is when a society has a practice or multiple practices in which the society is divided in half and each member of that society is a part of one group or the other.
48. Claude Levi-Strauss, *The Elementary Structures of Kinship*, translated by James Bell, Jon Von Sturmer, and Rodney Needham (Boston: Beacon Press, 1969), 75, my emphasis.
49. *Ibid.*
50. Stephen Turner, "Structuralist and Participant's View Sociologies" in *American Sociologist*, Vol. 9 (August, 1974), 143–146.
51. *Ibid.*
52. Turner, "Complex Organizations as Savage Tribes" in *American Philosophical Quarterly*, Vol. 14, No. 3 (July 1977), 99–125.
53. See chapter 1.
54. Althusser, "Philosophy and Marxism" in *Louis Althusser: Philosophy of the Encounter, Later Writings, 1978–1987*, edited by Francois Matheron and Oliver Corpet, translated by G.M. Goshgarian (New York and London: Verso, 2006), 263.
55. *Ibid.*
56. *Ibid.*, 264.
57. To be sure, this critique is one that is launched against Althusser's understanding of Hegel, which will be problematized in later chapters of the book. Specifically when we get to Žižek's reading of Hegel in chapter 5.
58. Althusser, *For Marx*, 101.
59. *Ibid.*, 102.
60. *Ibid.*, 100.
61. Macherey, *In a Materialist Way*, 161–187.
62. *Ibid.*, 164.
63. See Althusser, *The Humanist Controversy*, 19–21.
64. Althusser, "The Only Materialist Tradition: Spinoza" in *The New Spinoza*, 7.
65. Althusser, *For Marx*, 170.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Althusser, Louis. *Essays in Self-Criticism*. Translated by Grahame Lock. New York: New Left Books, 1976.
- . *For Marx*. Translated by Ben Brewster. New York and London: Verso, 2005.
- . "Ideology and Ideological State Apparatuses (Notes towards an Investigation)" in *Mapping Ideology*. Edited by Slavoj Žižek. New York and London: Verso, 1994. 100–140.

- . *Louis Althusser: The Humanist Controversy*. Edited by Francois Matheron, translated by G.M. Goshgarian. New York and London: Verso, 2003.
- . “The Only Materialist Tradition: Spinoza” in *The New Spinoza (Theory out of Bounds)*. Edited by Warren Montag and Ted Stolze. Minneapolis: University of Minnesota Press, 2008. 2–19.
- . *Philosophy of the Encounter: Later Writings 1978–1987*. Edited by Francois Matheron and Oliver Corpet, translated by G.M. Goshgarian. New York and London: Verso, 2006.
- Anderson, Perry. *Considerations in Western Marxism*. New York and London: Verso, 1976.
- Bachelard, Gaston. *The Formation of Scientific Mind*. Translated by Mary McAlister Jones. Manchester: Clinamen Press, 2002.
- Benton, Ted. *The Rise and Fall of Structural Marxism: Althusser and His Influence*. New York: St. Martin’s Press, 1984.
- Diefenbach, Katja, Sara R. Farris, Gal Kirn, and Peter Thomas Eds. *Encountering Althusser: Politics and Materialism in Contemporary Radical Thought*. London: Bloomsbury, 2012.
- Elliott, Gregory. *Althusser: The Detour of Theory*. Leiden: Brill, 2005.
- Fromm, Eric (Ed.). *Socialist Humanism*. New York: Anchor Books, 1966.
- Lecourt, Dominique. *Proletarian Science? The Case of Lysenko*. Translated by Ben Brewster. London: New Left Books, 1977.
- Levi-Strauss, Claude. *The Elementary Structures of Kinship*. Translated by James Bell, Jon Von Sturmer, and Rodney Needham. Boston: Beacon Press, 1969.
- Lewis, William. *Louis Althusser and the Traditions of French Marxism*. New York: Lexington Books, 2005.
- Macherey, Pierre. *In a Materialist Way*. Translated by Ted Stolze. New York and London: Verso, 1998.
- Montag, Warren. *Althusser and His Contemporaries: Philosophy’s Perpetual War*. Durham: Duke University Press, 2013.
- . *Bodies, Masses, Power: Spinoza and His Contemporaries*. New York and London: Verso, 1999.
- Spinoza, Baruch. *The Ethics, Treatise on the Emendation of the Intellect, and Selected Letters*. Edited by Seymour Feldman, translated by Sam Shirley. Indianapolis and Cambridge: Hackett, 1992.
- Thomas, Peter. “Philosophical Strategies: Althusser and Spinoza” in *Historical Materialism*. Vol. 10, No. 3 (2002). 71–113.
- Turner, Stephen. “Complex Organizations as Savage Tribes” in *American Philosophical Quarterly*. Vol. 14, No. 3 (July, 1977). 99–125.
- . “Structuralist and Participant’s View Sociologies” in *The American Sociologist*. Vol. 9 (August, 1974). 143–146.
- Williams, Caroline. *Contemporary French Philosophy: Modernity and the Persistence of the Subject*. London and New York: Continuum, 2001.
- . “Ideology and the Imaginary” in *Ideology After Poststructuralism*. Edited by Sinisa Malesevic and Iain MacKenzie. London: Pluto Press, 2002. 28–42.

3 Badiou's Materialist Project

Stasis and Change

As noted in the introduction to this book, what I do here is to show how it is that both Alain Badiou and Slavoj Žižek share a theoretical debt to Althusser while at the same time attempt to overcome the impasse left in the Althusser's theoretics. This chapter begins that project in relation to the thought of Alain Badiou. It is certainly well known that Badiou's thought is indebted to Althusser.¹ This chapter gives a brief overview of Badiou's materialist thought, and its relation to Althusser, echoing some of what has already been pointed out by others but also taking issue with what some have said. The chapter that follows this one will then move to a further discussion of the details of Badiou's attempt at a solution to the problems of Althusser's theory as identified in chapter two, and it will, most importantly, assess the success of Badiou's method of correcting Althusser's theory in the construction of his own.

Badiou, like Althusser, remains steadfastly committed to a certain type of Marxism, one that asserts that radical change is not only possible, but is in at least in one sense, inevitable. This inevitability is not, however, akin to the vulgar Marxist notion of a necessary evolution through capitalism ending in communism; rather, for Badiou, radical change is inevitable because it is simply something that happens, the idea that a given historical moment, or conjuncture, could give way to a kind of eternal stasis, or put an end to history is flatly false according to Badiou. Large-scale change has happened in the past, and will happen again.

Furthermore, for Badiou, modification is not true change; it is instead a way for a given social order to stave off real change and perpetuate itself in its attempts to assert a false (ideologically driven) eternal stasis. For Badiou, change is not something that happens slowly and gradually; it happens as a result of a quick and revolutionary shift in which the existing order is destabilized and ultimately toppled. As Adrian Johnston has nicely put the point, for Badiou, our worlds have two temporalities, one which can be characterized as relatively static, in which nothing really changes, and one in which there is a rapid fire change that results from what Badiou characterizes as an 'event.'²

The event, as Badiou describes it in his 1988 Magnum Opus *Being and Event*, is something which emerges out of a given 'situation'—Badiou's term

for a state of affairs or a given historical moment that is relatively static—and has the effect of making the static temporal mode (which always appears as stable, natural, and necessary to those living in it) exhibit its normally hidden fragile instability.³ By shining a light on the unstable nature of the static temporality, the event paves the way for a change that inserts a break or a rupture with a given temporal moment. We can think here of a break in the Bachelardian sense, though for Badiou this is not merely an epistemological event, it is one that has consequences beyond the field of knowledge. The event itself, however, is not enough. Events require the recognition of their eventual status by individuals who experience them in such a way as to be affected by their appearance and become the event's 'subjects.' These eventual subjects work to sustain the 'truth' that the event brings to light. One of Badiou's examples of such an event and the subject who arises in its wake, helping to usher in the change that is announced by the event, is the conversion of Saint Paul.

Briefly, Badiou argues that Saint Paul becomes a Christian in becoming a 'subject' of the event that befell him on the road to Damascus. It is only as a result of this that Paul becomes Saint Paul. As Badiou describes it, Paul becomes the 'subject' of this event and declares his fidelity to its truth (the resurrection and the Christian belief in the equality of all before God), a truth which he passively receives and which occurs within the 'situation' that existed at the time (a situation in which this particular truth was not existent). The event exceeds the situation in which it arises because for Paul (and subsequently, his followers) it effectively emptied—or 'voided'—that historical moment of its prior organization and all of the existing different identities and social organizations based on them. For Paul and his followers, no longer were there Jews, Greeks, Romans, Christians, and other identitarian categories; there were simply, only, and universally God's subjects.⁴

As a result of this event, and the work of those that became its subjects, the social world was irrevocably changed, and was so in a radical (and quick way). For Badiou (who is a committed atheist), it matters little that this was a theological transformation. What matters is this example's exhibition of the power of the event. As Badiou theorizes it, Paul's conversion shows us the difference in the two temporalities, the unchanging relatively static world that Paul found himself in prior to the event, in which there existed many differences that were conditioned by the existing historical situation, and the quick, revolutionary change that follows on the heels of that event, in which those differences no longer make sense (at least for those who became the event's subjects).

As noted above, the affirmation of such an eventual 'truth' will depend on those who are subjected to it by experiencing the 'event' that reveals it. Events and their truths cannot be guaranteed, justified, provoked, or proven based on anything about a given historical situation as it is prior to an event's happening. In other words, events are ephemera, but what they reveal is not. Before the event, our knowledge and experience of the world

(and of ourselves) is the product of the historically contingent order, structures, and differences that exist at any given time within which there is really no universality. It is only in the revelation provided by the 'event' that one is able to see the historically contingent nature of one's existence and modes of knowing the world (which is part of the universal truth that such events reveal). Thus, as Badiou points out, "to enter into the composition of a subject of truth can only be *something that happens to you*."⁵ The recognition of universality can only, on Badiou's accounting of things, come through the passive reception of the event itself. Thus, as is the case for Althusser, Badiou conceives of change as depending not on the activity of individuals working within a given situation seeking change, but rather, on the aleatory, or the chance occurrence of an event which then can reorient individuals to become the agents of such change.⁶

Of course, and as I have already noted, what I have all too briefly described above is Badiou's thought as it is expressed in his work in and after *Being and Event*. There is another (and important) Badiou that needs also to be discussed here. This is the early Badiou. The Badiou that looks to Mao as a means to begin to address the Althusserian problem discussed at the end of the last chapter. Before continuing to explore the mature Badiou's thought, I want to pause here and discuss this early period of Badiou's work as it is important for both understanding how the later work unfolds and, as I will argue in the next chapter, the issues that arise in Badiou's attempts to address the Althusserian problem. The place to begin is with Badiou's 1967 review of some of the Althusserian texts that occupied much of the last chapter—namely those found in Althusser's *For Marx* as well as *Reading Capital*—titled "the (Re)commencement of Dialectical Materialism," as it is here that we first get a glimpse of Badiou's early views of the work of his teacher.

I.

Badiou begins his review by analyzing the Althusserian understanding of the connected roles that dialectical and historical materialism play in Marx's philosophy. As Badiou correctly describes it here, Althusser understands historical materialism to be the science (of history) that Marx finds in the break with Hegel and Feuerbach, and dialectical materialism to be, as Badiou puts it, "the discipline within which it is possible in principle to pronounce the scientificity of this science."⁷ In other words, for Althusser, dialectical materialism is the philosophy (founded by Marx after the epistemological break) within which it becomes possible to understand the science of historical materialism. It is, furthermore, here also that it becomes possible to understand the "scientificity of the sciences" in general.⁸ As Badiou argues, some Marxisms—such as the more humanist Marxism of Sartre, or the Stalinist Marxism of the PCF—have tried to either subordinate dialectical materialism to historical materialism (and/or vice versa), or reduce one

to the other, but Althusser's understanding of the two makes this impossible. The difference between historical materialism and dialectical materialism is preserved in Althusser's account, yet this is, according to Badiou, an 'impure' difference:⁹

The distinction DM [dialectical materialism] and HM [historical materialism] is *internal to DM* . . . And yet, in conformity with what we would have to call the double break, *DM depends on HM*, in a theoretical dependency that is still obscure . . . because as opposed to idealist epistemologies, DM is a *historical* theory of science . . . We see thus, up to what point the difference of DM and HM is not distributive. We have here a non-differentiating difference, which in principle, is mixed: impure.¹⁰

The 'impurity,' thus, is that in which dialectical materialism and historical materialism are co-constitutive. This, of course, echoes what was said earlier (in chapter one) when discussing the conventionalist nature of the Althusserian understanding of science and scientific truth; the science of historical materialism is founded—not found—by Marx in his construction of dialectical materialism (which in turn, depends on historical materialism as Badiou notes in the quotation above), and this, as Badiou nicely puts it, “enabled the passage of philosophy from an ideological state to the state of a scientific discipline.”¹¹ At the same time—and here is the important connection to our discussion in chapter one—it allowed for the identification of ideology as such. We are, thus, driven back to what was described at the end of the chapter 2 as the problematic Althusserian distinction between science and ideology: in the founding of the possibility of science as science—or, dialectical materialism—we also have the founding of ideology as ideology. In this way, the two are inextricably linked. Here is Badiou:

From the definition of DM (discipline in which the scientificity of HM is pronounced) we immediately derive that the determining concept of its field is that of science. DM would not be able to exhibit the identity of science in an un-decomposable 'seeing': Thus, what comes first is the differential *couple* science-ideology. The object proper to dialectical materialism is the system of pertinent differences that both and at the same time disjoins and joins science and ideology.¹²

This is not to be missed. What Badiou does here is carry over the notion of the constitutive 'impurity' that he used to describe the relational differentiation of dialectical and historical materialism into the realm of the science-ideology split. As Badiou reads it, like the relation between DM and HM, these two terms are different but also necessarily bound up together in the same fashion. Here he argues that ultimately, “science, is the science of ideology” but also that “ideology is always the ideology for a science.”¹³

Understood this way, what Marxist science (as Althusser describes it) does (echoing, once again, some of what was said in chapter one, though in a slightly different way) is first and foremost mark the difference between the scientific and the ideological, thereby identifying the ideological as such (and at the same time, the scientific as the scientific), which then, in turn, constructs what is determined as ideological to be so for that particular science. Bruno Bosteels, in commenting on this, puts the point this way, “not only is every science dependent on the ideology that serves merely to designate its possible existence, but there is also no discourse known as ideological except through the retroaction of science.”¹⁴

So in this text, the Badiouan claim here is, that what I described at the end of chapter two as a problem for Althusser, is not necessarily a problem. It is rather part and parcel of the Althusserian theory that there is an impure relation between science and ideology: they simply cannot be separated. Though Badiou's overall assessment of Althusser's work will change, Bosteels is right to note, as we will see, that this understanding of the Althusserian conception of the ‘impure’ relations between dialectical and historical materialism and science and ideology is critical for making sense of Badiou's own theoretical enterprise as it remains influential throughout Badiou's work from its beginnings into the present (though in chapter four, I will take issue, in part, with this view).¹⁵

In fact, in Badiou's *Theory of Contradiction* (1975), at the same time that he offers a critique of Althusser's conception of Marxism as “a process without a Subject” and Althusser's description of the subject (in connection with the reading of Lenin) as wholly determined—or interpellated—by the structures (or, the collection of apparatuses—both state and ideological—that exist at a given time) within which it is embedded, Badiou argues that Althusser misses the ‘split’ or, we might say here, ‘impure’ identity within subjectivity itself.¹⁶ Colin Wright offers a nice explanation of this argument showing us that Badiou claims Althusser misreads Lenin on subjectivity (in effect reading his own position into Lenin's):

Read closely, Lenin attacks not the general category of the subject as such, but rather the idealist predicates of the *bourgeois* subject. Rather than sweeping away the whole category, Lenin splits the one of the subject into two: either it is religious (recall that Althusser draws on Pascal to describe his constitutively faithful subject) or it is materialist. For Badiou, Lenin's dialectical materialism is actually a process very much *with* a subject. Althusser's objective formalism is in contrast, a pre-eminent example of the new metaphysical invariant. It provides the protocol for thinking change, but simultaneously subordinates the explosively divisive power of the dialectic under a non-dialectical ‘rule.’¹⁷

The “metaphysical invariant” is the rule of structural causality, which as we know well by now, Althusser sees as that through which, and only

through which, history proceeds, and subjectivity comes into being. In opposition to this, as Wright notes, Badiou seeks to show that we must insist that there is “no identity other than a split one” and that the historical ‘process’ is itself dialectical in such a way that, as Badiou puts it, “the dialectical concept of synthesis is the engendering of a new scission and nothing else.”¹⁸ This is to say that rather than seeing the triumph of structure over the subject as the outcome of the proper dialectical materialist analysis, we have to understand the split engendered in both the process of the structure and the process of subjection.

In other words, sure, subjects are, as Althusser describes, constructs of conjunctural apparatuses, but they also, as such, have the potential to influence the very apparatuses in which they find their existence—just not in the ways that the classical bourgeois notions of a ‘free’ subjectivity describe it (on this score, Althusser’s criticism is correct). Further, sure, conjunctural apparatuses (both state and ideological) are deterministic in a whole host of ways, but these too are split and are at times both historically contingent and unpredictable. In this way, both structure and subject are impure.

To be sure, Badiou’s argument here is not only drawn from his reading of the ‘impurity’ of the relation between science and ideology (and dialectical and historical materialism) in Althusser—and then made use of in the criticism of Althusser—but also from the Maoist notions of process and contradiction wherein not only is, as Wright points out, all reality process, but also that this process is itself “in the last resort, a system of contradictions.”¹⁹ Or, as Mao himself puts it:

The universality or absoluteness of contradiction has a two-fold meaning. One is that contradiction exists in the process of the development of all things and the other is that *in the process of development of each thing, a movement of opposites exists from beginning to end.*²⁰

So, for Badiou, at least in 1975, both subject and structure are not only ‘impurely’ related insofar as structure calls the subject into existence, and the subject serves as support for the structure, but it is also the case that each of these terms are themselves split in a Maoist fashion.

We can see this view at work again in Badiou’s description of the political subject and its relation to capitalism in the beginning of his 1982 *Theory of the Subject*. Here he argues that capitalist society can be understood in relation to two important and well-known (Marxist) contradictions. The first is what he calls the “fundamental” contradiction “between the productive forces and the social relations of production”; and the second, what Badiou calls the “principle” contradiction, is that “between the antagonistic social classes.”²¹ The fundamental contradiction is, of course, the classical Marxist notion of the “base,” whereas the principle contradiction is, as Badiou describes it, the “motor” echoing Marx and Engels’ famous dictum in the *Manifesto* that “all history is the history of Class Struggle.”²²

Here though, Badiou points out that between these two contradictions, we get two different definitions of capitalism, historical transformation, and ultimately two different definitions of the Marxian political subject that is the working class. With the first contradiction—the ‘fundamental’ contradiction—we get a definition of human history as driven by the base as described in the classical Marxist conception of the base/superstructure. This is a much more structural conception: subjects are who and what they are as a result of the underlying and transforming economic contradictions in the base that exist at a given time. The ‘primary’ contradiction, on the other hand, as just noted, views the social history of humanity as resulting from the competing interests of—and antagonism between—active class subjects. As Badiou argues here, these two definitions, though they are seemingly in conflict with one another are themselves related in that they represent—in true Maoist fashion—the inherent scission within capitalism itself as Marxism views it. Badiou shows this to be the case by looking to the role that the working class plays in both definitions:

This would be an aporia except that *The working class forms a knot*. The class plays an active part both in the first definition, where it is the principle productive force, and in the second, where, in the guise of its political unity and under the name thus conquered of the proletariat, it confronts the bourgeoisie.²³

So here we see that, not only do we have a divided definition of capitalism but also of the working class. In the first definition we have the working class as that which is the machinery of production and nothing more; and in the second, the working class becomes a revolutionary political force. But again, here, as Badiou understands this, what appears to be a problematic contradiction, is representative of the impurity of the scission within the two definitions and ultimately within the proletariat itself:

We are only apparently confronted with the choice of saying that the working class is designated either as a place in the relations of production or as the concentration of all antagonism to the bourgeoisie. Taken in isolation, the first definition leads directly to the result that the class, which would exist only in the factory, confines its subjectivization to the gloomy protestations of trade unionism, or its variants. The second, antagonism, detached from all anchoring in the process of production, makes one believe that cutting open the belly of an empirical bourgeois with the tip of the terrorist pick weakens the dictatorship of Capital.²⁴

So here we have nothing other than the dialectical scission that cuts to the heart of the Marxist analysis of the working class. It is both and at the same time the machinery of the productive forces, its interests in the capacity are, in fact, trade unionism, but it is also the potential revolutionary force that

Marx and Engels describe in the *Manifesto* as that which can bring death to Capital itself.²⁵ Badiou continues:

Class, apprehended according to the dialectical division of its dialecticity, means partisan political action anchored in the productive historicity of the masses . . . The whole point is to know how this works together, because it is this working-together that *is* class. This entails nothing less than to make the rectifiable singularity of politics rise up in the real movement of history.²⁶

Here we can clearly see the connection back to Badiou's theorization of the 'event' in *Being and Event* and beyond. It is precisely the moment in which "the rectifiable singularity of politics rise up in the real movement of history" that is evental. With the foregoing in mind, we can now turn back to this more contemporary period in Badiou's work and the conception of both stasis and change that emerges there.

II.

I want to set aside for a moment any further discussion about what constitutes such an 'event'—as I will return to this later—and first concentrate on the claim, described at the beginning of this chapter, that events "void" the existing differences between people (and things). As we just saw, Badiou's Maoism leads him to the view that any particular existing organization of things in the world is not eternal, stable, or ultimately necessary, but rather something which is of contingent historical origin (think here of the Maoist principles discussed above of process and contradiction). This goes for any of the various ways objects in the world are carved up and cataloged by our knowledge. This is also true of human awareness and our historical and social organizations (political and/or otherwise). Those things that count as beings are as they are as a result of an operation Badiou describes in the beginning of *Being and Event* as the count-as-one.²⁷ Badiou argues here that "what has to be declared is that the one, which is not, solely exists as an operation, in other words, there is no one, only the count-as-one."²⁸ Being-in-itself (what Badiou terms "being-*qua*-being") is not a one, or a whole, but rather an infinite—or incomplete—multiplicity full of divisions and contradictions. This multiplicity comes to be structured (made to appear complete) by a particular operation of counting-for-one that produces what Badiou calls a 'situation' in which being presents itself as containing a multiplicity of structured ones. In this process, being's foundational and fundamental contradictory incompleteness is, according to Badiou, subtracted from that which is presented in the situation. In other words, what is covered over—subtracted—in the process of presentation is the fundamental lack-of-completion and what the early Badiou would have referred to as the 'scission' inherent in all being.

Badiou argues, moreover, that a given 'multiple' (or thing) itself only comes to be legible as multiple (as a 'one' that is but a single multiple in a consistent multiplicity of ones) in presentation (in being made consistent so as to become legible by the operation that counts the multiple as one). Summarizing this, Badiou writes:

. . . The multiple is the regime of presentation; the one, in respect to presentation is an operational result, being is what presents (itself). On this basis, being is neither one (because only presentation itself is pertinent to the count as one) nor multiple (because the multiple is solely the regime of presentation).²⁹

To understand ontology is thus to think the foundational inconsistent/incomplete/contradictory multiplicity in-itself; outside of any counting operation that makes such a multiplicity a structured, consistent multiplicity of ones. In order to do this, that is, to think being's incompleteness, we must come to understand the counting operation and the ways in which the situation (which, as we have seen, is what results from the count) is structured so as to both present itself as a totality of structured ones and contain (a hidden) incompleteness. In *Being and Event*, Badiou turns to mathematics and, more specifically, to Cantorian set theory as a means by which to think such an ontology of being in which we are able to discern the non-existence of the whole, and the twin processes which create the one, namely the process of the count-as-one, and the subtraction of being's incompleteness (its inconsistency). In the next section I will give a brief account of the portions of Cantor's mathematical theorization that are important for Badiou in this period.

III.

According to Cantor, a well-ordered set of numbers is a set in which for every number that is a member of that set, there is a new number that is ordinally related to that number insofar as it is the successor of the original number. This is commonly known as the 'theory of ordinals' and can be demonstrated most basically in relation to the natural numbers, which are themselves ordinals. For every natural number (and for the set of all natural numbers), there is a number, which is ordinally related to that number such that it follows the original number in succession (the number 2 is ordinally related to 1; 3 is ordinally related to 2, etc.). The theory of ordinals applies, according to Cantor, both to finite numbers, like the natural numbers, and to what he calls 'transfinite numbers' or ever-increasing infinite sets of numbers. In this way, there is no one set or collection which can/does collect together all ordinals into a closed whole. That is, there is not one infinite set containing all possible ordinals, but rather, there are multiple 'transfinite' sets of ordinals (which are themselves ordered in relation to one another).

Cantor argues for the existence of transfinite sets of numbers, in part by referring back to the point we have already seen, that sets of numbers can be ordinals in the same way that a single numbers can be ordinally related to one another. Given this, we can see how one can have a set of all the natural numbers (an infinite set) which can itself be an ordinal in relation to the set of all the natural numbers plus one, and that set can be ordinally related to a greater set and so on. Hence one can suppose the existence of multiple infinite sets, or transfinite ordinals as Cantor himself argues:

. . . The smallest transfinite ordinal number, which I denote ω , belongs [to the transfinite], for it can be increased, enlarged to the next greater ordinal number $\omega+1$, this again to $\omega+2$, and so on. But the smallest actually infinite power or cardinal number is also transfinite, and the same holds of the next greater cardinal number and so on.³⁰

The smallest of the transfinite ordinals (Cantor's ω) is the set that contains all of the finite numbers (the natural numbers and their fractions), commonly denoted as \aleph_0 . Cantor proved that this set is smaller than the set of the so-called 'Real numbers' (the set containing both the finite numbers and the 'irrational' and 'transcendental' numbers) so here we have two distinct infinite sets of differing sizes. Further, Cantor famously goes on to prove that the infinite set containing the real numbers is equivalent to 2^{\aleph_0} (That is, it is the power set of \aleph_0).

Once proving this, Cantor asks whether the 2^{\aleph_0} is equivalent to the transfinite number that is denoted by \aleph_1 (or $\omega+1$ in Cantor's own notation), which would then make it the transfinite ordinal that is the immediate successor to \aleph_0 . This is the content of the Continuum Hypothesis, and if the Continuum Hypothesis were to be proved true, then \aleph_1 —the transfinite ordinal that follows \aleph_0 —would be equivalent to 2^{\aleph_0} , which would then in turn mean that \aleph_2 would be equivalent to 2^{\aleph_1} , and so forth. The proof (or disproof) of the truth of Continuum Hypothesis has major implications beyond the realm of mathematics and set theory, as Peter Hallward points out:

[The Continuum Hypothesis] . . . asserts an orderly, well-defined relation between the conventional measuring system of mathematics (the numerical hierarchy of alephs) and the real numbers of physical science. If this Continuum Hypothesis were true, not only would there be (*pace* Bergson) a precise, measurable link between physical continuity and number, but everything within the transfinite universe could be thought of as in its appropriate place, as occupying degrees in a clearly ordered hierarchy . . . On the other hand, if CH cannot be proved, there is at least one infinite number, 2^{\aleph_0} , that cannot be assigned a definite place in the cumulative hierarchy. Looking at the equation from the other way around, if CH is not true, the smallest infinite power set (2^{\aleph_0}) is a kind of pure immeasurable excess over the set \aleph_0 itself. A universe that denies

CH would thus accept a degree of ontological anarchy. It would tolerate the existence of sets that could not be assigned any clear place in an order that would include them.³¹

As is well known, though the Continuum Hypothesis has neither been proven true nor false, P.J. Cohen has shown its independence from the axioms of set theory; and this, for many—including Badiou—is tantamount to a proof of its falsehood.³² For Badiou, the philosophical take-away from this is that being is not closed: there is no foundational consistent whole (this is the meaning of the Badiouan claim that “the one is not”). Further, because being as it presents itself to us, is such that it appears well-ordered (and complete), presentation itself must also contain that which is inconsistent (not well-ordered). Without the formalism of the set theoretical *mathe*me outlined above, Badiou argues that:

. . . The inconsistent multiple is unthinkable as such . . . the inconsistent multiple is solely—before the one-effect in which it is structured—an ungraspable horizon of being . . . the pure multiple scarcely occurs in presentation before it has already dissipated; its non-occurrence is like a flight of scenes from a dream.³³

In appearance, the inconsistent multiple is barred from showing itself. Being, as presented to us—as in-situation—is always-already structured by the count-as-one operation. This is why being as such (being-*qua*-being) is unthinkable without the aid of set theory. The mathematical formalism of set theory allows us to think the ontological position of inconsistent multiplicity, and thus to think the incompleteness of being from within a situation in which such inconsistency (and its attendant incompleteness) in-exists. Badiou continues:

. . . Since everything [in a given situation] is counted, yet given that the one of the count, obliged to be the result, leaves a phantom remainder—of the multiple not being in the form of the one—one has to allow that inside the situation the pure or inconsistent multiple is both excluded from everything, and thus from presentation itself, and included, in the name of what ‘would be’ the presentation itself, the presentation ‘in itself’, if what the law does not authorize to think was thinkable: that the one is not, that the being of consistency is inconsistency³⁴

That which is presented as consistent—and hence becomes a multiplicity of ones that are legible in a given situation—is made possible only by the law of the count, which in covering over the remaining inconsistency, makes it into something, namely that which is nothing (or no-thing) in a given situation:

Once the entirety of a situation is subject to the law of the one and consistency, it is necessary from the standpoint of immanence to the

situation, that the pure multiple, absolutely unrepresentable according to the count, be *nothing*. But being-nothing is as distinct from not being as the 'there is' is distinct from being.³⁵

Badiou's name for this particular nothingness that exists, that has a place in a given situation (after the act of the counting operation), but does so as subtracted from view in presentation, is the 'Void.' In discussing the place of the void in Badiou's work, we should be careful to point out here, along with Sam Gillespie, that the void is not to be seen as "a physically existing vacuum, or a lack, or a wound at the center of experience. It is simply Badiou's name for what is subtracted from presentation. And since nothing preexists presentation . . . the inconsistent un-presented of any situation is named the void."³⁶

Gillespie is correct in drawing a distinction between the pure multiple, whose status we can think mathematically as a result of Cantorian set theory (and developments in relation to this), and the 'Void,' which for Badiou is the name for what comes-to-be as a result of the counting operation and the resultant situation, but whose being is that of the nothing (or the subtracted) which, though distinct from the pure multiple, we also are able to think with the help of the *matheme*.³⁷ The theory of the void is, in this way, central for Badiou's mature conception of change. In order to properly see this, we must first say more about the nature and status of Badiou's conception of the 'situation' as the (seemingly) static mode of temporality in which the void inheres.

IV.

We have already seen how it is that beings are counted-as-one (or have the kind of existence that they have) in the particular ways that they are/do as a result of their being a part of a 'situation.' Badiou defines a 'situation' as a "presented multiplicity," and he goes on to explain that a situation is "the place of taking place" of being as presented at a given time.³⁸ There are, according to Badiou, many different situations and each one "admits of its own particular operator of the count-as-one."³⁹ The 'operator' is termed by Badiou the 'structure' of the situation. It is the structure of the situation that determines *how* things are counted-as-one and, thus, how things show up as presented multiples:

When anything is counted-as-one in a situation all this means is that it belongs to the situation in the mode particular to the effects of the situation's structure . . . One must not forget that every situation is structured. The multiple is *retroactively* legible therein as *anterior* to the one, insofar as the count-as-one is always a result.⁴⁰

In 2006's *Logics of Worlds* Badiou further elaborates the concept of a 'situation,' which he now terms 'world.'⁴¹ Just as there are multiple situations,

there are multiple worlds defined by their particular structures which count-as-one various objects that belong to those worlds. The key innovation in *Logics of Worlds* for our purposes is Badiou's elaboration of the 'transcendental' nature of a (given or local) world's structure. Understanding this can both help us further make sense of Badiou's (remaining) debt to Althusser and his own brand of materialism.

"Every world," argues Badiou, "contains a transcendental organization"—or a structure in the parlance of *Being and Event*—but this organization is not to be confused with the Kantian version of transcendence, which relies on a subjective constitution of the existence of what is.⁴² Rather, for Badiou:

The transcendental . . . is altogether anterior to every subjective constitution for it is an eminent given of any situation whatsoever . . . it is what imposes on every situated multiplicity the constraint of a logic, which is also the law of its appearing, or a rule in accordance with which the 'there' of the being-there allows the multiple to come forth as essentially bound.⁴³

It is the transcendental organization that imposes a structure, or a 'logic,' on Being and beings such that they come to have the status that they do. This transcendental is, for Badiou, the non-ideal material structure within which, even we as beings, come to awareness of ourselves and our world. It is material insofar as it is not imposed on the world by consciousness but rather, one's conscious awareness is the product of the ways that the transcendental organizes and categorizes the world in which individuals find themselves.

Returning to the concept of a world (a situation) then, Badiou argues that we should understand this in terms of a "metaphor for the localization of multiples."⁴⁴ A world is the non-empty place within which multiples come to be legible insofar as they are counted-as-one by the particular logic that structures the count (the transcendental). The way in which the transcendental counts-as-one various multiples, and thus brings them to consistency allowing for their appearance is through a process (or an operation) of defining the identity of a given multiple in relation to other multiples that appear in-world. The transcendental is, then, the operation, which identifies the ways in which particular multiples are identical to, and differ from other multiples that come to consist (and hence to appear) in a given world. Here Badiou writes:

. . . We will call 'appearing' that which, of a mathematical multiple, is caught in a situated relational network (a world), such that this multiple comes to being-there, or to the status of being in a world [*étant-dans-un-monde*]. It is then possible to say that this being is more or less different from another being belonging to the same world. We will call 'transcendental' the operational set which allows us to make sense of the 'more or less' of identities and differences in a determinate world.⁴⁵

The transcendental of a given world is then, the operational set which, as Badiou says, “pronounces upon” or fixes the “degrees of identity and difference” that exist between multiples, and in doing so, makes them come to consist with one another in appearance.⁴⁶

We might think of how the world of the university defines the ways that people and things show up as members of its world. It does so through the defining of the ‘degrees of identity and difference’ between them. The various roles that individuals fulfill in the structure of the university, i.e., from the most general categories of student, faculty, staff, classroom, lab, library, dormitory, etc., to more fine-grained categories of identity and difference. The differences that exist in a student population between undergraduate and graduate, for instance, or between various ranks amongst faculty (assistant professor, professor, adjunct faculty, and so forth) define the world of the university and these differences do so by way of constructing categories that identify and define the various positions that individuals and things can inhabit within the world of the university (through an operational process of defining the ways in which things are ‘more or less’ identical) such that they come to appear to be consistent members of its world.

What matters in appearing, in the ‘fixing’ of the multiple such that it can appear consistently, is the operation—or the set of operations—which defines the ways that it is possible for the multiple to appear. The multiple itself does not enter into the process of its being defined in its being-there; its appearance is the result of this process. Thus, it is the operation that does this work and the operation is the a-subjective structure that emerges in the relations that come to be defined between objects, which then in turn defines the existence of those multiples that are presented in a given world. This is important as it returns us to the materialist theme.

As we have seen, a ‘local’ world and those objects (or multiples) which come to inhabit it is defined by its transcendental, or the structure of the count which marks out the set of identities and differences that exist within it and which constructs the being-there of the beings that exist within it. It is in this way that the world makes consistent the multiples that come to be legible as such. Here Badiou argues:

It is therefore clear in what sense we call transcendental that which authorizes the local (or intra-worldly) evaluation of identities and differences. To grasp the singularity of this usage of the word ‘transcendental,’ we should note that as in Kant, it concerns a question of possibility; but also that we are only dealing with local dispositions, and not with a theory of universal difference. To put it very simply: there are many transcendentals; the intra-worldly regulation of difference is itself differentiated. This is one of the main reasons why it is impossible to argue from a unified ‘centre’ of transcendental organization, such as the Subject is for Kant.⁴⁷

In the example of the university-world given above, those individuals who appear as members of this world do so only insofar as they are subjected to the operations which define the categories that they may come to inhabit and so appear within the situation. This is true for the objects that exist in this world and for the humans that exist in the world. It is the structure or the logic that is defined by the set of operations, which as we have seen, construct the categories that people may come to inhabit (through a process of relational differentiation) that allows for a person's appearance in that world. The individual human plays no role in the construction of this world except insofar as she, if she comes to appear in the world of the university, is defined by it; by the set of transcendental ordering operations that define the places that the individual can inhabit. The world of the university pre-exists my coming to inhabit it, and if I do come to inhabit it, I do so in the ways prescribed by the logic of the structure. Of course, if I am a being that inhabits the world of the university, it is never only this that sets the terms of my identity. I can, and do, inhabit multiple worlds as do many other 'objects' as Badiou points out:

It goes without saying after all, that a being . . . can appear in different worlds. It would be absurd to think that there is an intrinsic link between a given multiple and a given world. The 'worlding' of a formal being, which is its being-there or appearing, is ultimately a logical operation: the access to a local guarantee of its identity. This operation may be produced in numerous different ways, and it may imply entirely distinct worlds as the grounds for the further operations it elicits. In particular, man is the animal that appears in a great number of worlds. Empirically, we could even say that it is nothing but this: the being which, among all those whose being we acknowledge, appears most multiply.⁴⁸

Badiou takes this as further evidence for his claims about the human's lack of ability to be the 'centre' from which the transcendental organization of a world emanates. Pace Althusser's theory of interpellation, I do not construct the categories that I come to inhabit, I am inhabited by them such that I come to understand myself in the particular ways that are defined by their particular logics. Further, since I am a being who can be 'worlded' (or interpellated) multiply, I simply cannot be the agent of this process; I am that which is acted on by it in different ways, at different times, in different situations (to shift back to the language of *Being and Event*). Hence, in my being 'worlded' by a particular materially existent logic, I am not a subject. My 'selfhood' has the character and status of that which comes from the logic of the world (and its process of relational differentiation). This is yet another place in which Badiou breaks with Althusser. Recall that for Althusser, I become a subject by being subjected to the interpellative process. Badiou is unwilling to call the human as worlded (or interpellated) a 'subject.'⁴⁹

It is in this way that, according to Badiou, my “worlded” self is materially, an ‘other-self’ or an object-self. It is an ‘other-self’ insofar as the selfhood that I find myself with is defined not by me or my choices, but by those things which present themselves to me as possible choices to make (where there are such choices), ways to be, or identities to inhabit which have their existence in something other than me, namely the material of the world and the transcendental logic that structures it. This self is an object-self insofar as I am presented in this world (both to myself and others) in the same way as all other objects are, again as determined by the law of the count and the transcendental structure that defines the worldhood of the particular world in which I find myself. In other words, who I am as a being in-situation (or a being that is ‘worlded’) is a being whose ‘identity’—whose own being—is defined in its being, by its being differentiated from, and related to, other multiples—by ‘being-other’ than those multiples to varying degrees—by the structural logic of the count. As Badiou puts the point: “. . . a ‘real’ being is the one which, appearing locally (in a world), is at the same time its own multiple-identity—as thought by rational ontology—and the various degrees of its difference from other beings in the same world.”⁵⁰

We are firmly in the realm of Althusserian anti-humanism here, but this account of the structure of social existence is also akin to the one given by Levi-Strauss and structuralism. What is important for Badiou at this stage, in making sense of how things appear in a given world, is not the things themselves (or the conscious awareness of those humans that show up in particular ways in a given world) but the relations between those things and people that are presented in a world; and these relations are defined, as we have seen, by the logic or the law of the count. In this way, the Badiou of *Logics of Worlds* endorses a quasi-structuralist account of the worldhood of a given world (or situation). I say ‘quasi-structuralist’ here because for Badiou it is not the relations that do the defining, but rather the relations exist insofar as those things which count become linked as a result of the count or the law.⁵¹ We will return to this in detail in the next chapter, but I bring it up here in order to return to the question that began this section of the chapter, namely the question of the defining of the static mode of temporality.

Worlds are that which ground this mode of temporality. Everything that appears or is presented in a world is in its ‘proper’ place and is determined to be the way it is by the place that it inhabits. In this way, beings in a given world are fixed and relatively static. Again we can return to my example of the world of the university in order to make sense of this. The categories marked out by the world of the university are themselves relatively static. It is true that over long periods of time the world of the university changes shape slightly, but it never does so in a radical and quick way.⁵² The basic categories that are available to be inhabited by various beings are fixed not by the beings that inhabit them, but by their relations to other categories and only shift and change insofar as the other categories shift and change

(which is itself a long slow process and hence, on Badiou's account, not really change at all). It should be obvious at this point that there is connection back to Badiou's early work here. Recall the discussion above about the example he gives in *Theory of the Subject* of the seemingly contradictory (but really impure) Marxist definition(s) of Capitalism and the conception(s) of working-class subjects that emerges out of this. The definition of the working-class subject derived from the Fundamental contradiction is the one that fits here quite nicely with the worlded non-subject whose only ability to make change is defined for them by the logic of the world. However, as we already know, this is not all there is: there is another dialectically related subject possible, lurking underneath the counted-as-one non-subject, who has the explosive potential to be an actual agent of change. I now would like to turn to a brief discussion of this other mode of temporality that Badiou defines: the mode of change in which a given world (and its attendant static temporality) gives way to a new existence.

V.

We know, once again, from the foregoing, that Badiou's understanding of ontology is such that change is made possible by the foundational lack of closure in existence. The failure to prove the truth of the Continuum Hypothesis (or, its having been proved independent from the axioms of set theory at least), for Badiou, guarantees this claim. There is, in existence, as Hallward puts the point in the quote cited earlier "a degree of ontological anarchy."⁵³ This is also consistent with Badiou's early Maoist critique of Althusser wherein, as we saw, Badiou claims that Althusser is not sufficiently aware of the scission at the heart of both structure and subject. It is this, on Badiou's account, that is the foundation for the possibility of the overcoming of the static and unchanging temporality that attends the existence of a given world. Badiou argues in his later work, as noted at the beginning of this chapter, that it is in the moment of an 'event' that this bit of anarchy appears in a given world and disrupts its stasis. The event does not, however, reveal the inconsistent multiple as such (or being-qua-being) as this is never revealed; we only access it through the formalism of mathematical ontology. Rather what appears in the moment of the event is the 'void' of a given world, that particular bit of being that exists as 'the' nothing as determined by a given logic or structure, and as such is subtracted from the everyday quotidian experience of that given world. The appearance of this void then acts to destabilize the logic or the structure of the world insofar as it disrupts the relations amongst the beings that are presented in that world and displays the lack of closure and hence the lack of the necessity of that particular existing relational logic.

We might, in order to make sense of this, return to thinking about the nature of being as it appears in-situation (in a world). Specifically, we should

look again at the being-there of humans in a given world. As we already noted, the being-there of the human in a given world is defined by the relations that exist between that particular human and other beings that are counted-as-one by the law of the count. We described, along with Badiou, the nature of this being as 'being-other.' This means, as we saw, that the worlded self is such that it gets its identity through its being marked as something 'other' than this or that being (again, it is the relations of identity and difference that matter here).

There is, however, a further (and important) lesson to be drawn from this according to Badiou. Namely, that in my being 'worlded' by a particular logic or structure, I am a being who, in appearance or in presentation (both to myself and to others), is split. Here again, we see the continued role that Maoism plays for Badiou. Not only do I become an 'other-self' in the ways described above, but I also become something 'other' than what I am outside of the structural logic of that particular world, or what I would be outside the law of the particular world in which I find myself and to which my experience of myself is bound:

The key to thinking appearing, when it comes to a singular being, lies in being able to determine, at one and the same time, the self-difference which makes it so being-there is not being-qua-being, and the difference from others which makes it so that being there, or the law of the world which is shared by these others, does not abolish being-qua-being.⁵⁴

Though it is the case that the law of the world is what defines my identity 'in-world,' this does not, as Badiou claims above, 'abolish' being-qua-being in my own case, and in the case of other beings found in a given world. In the case of individual humans we can say (or speculate) that a human as being-qua-being is something other than a human as encountered in a given world. Recall that, as we also noted above, according to Badiou, humans are beings who have the possibility of being worlded in many different ways. Again, this brings us up against the claim that, as a human, I am fundamentally split in my being worlded. I am, in a given world, identified by the law of that world, but I am not coextensive with that identification (though it appears to me and to others that I am). The fact that I can be worlded in other ways by other transcendentals allows me to think (theoretically) the incompleteness of being in-world though I am unable to glimpse this incompleteness as it has been subtracted from view by the logic of the transcendental. It is only in the space of the event that this is revealed to me.

The event has the power to show me that the identity(s) that I find myself with (and those that others find themselves with) are non-necessary, derivative, and ultimately unstable. That is to say, the event reveals the incomplete nature of the transcendental and the world that it constructs not by revealing being-qua-being itself, but by revealing the void of the situation, or the split between myself as worlded and myself as a being that is not only my

worlded self (the event can show me that my worlded self is not all there is). It shows my being in excess of the world in which I find myself. In doing this, the event allows for the possibility of acting not only in the ways prescribed by the transcendental but in ways that are no longer conditioned by it. In this way then, the event allows for the creation of a true subjectivity insofar as those who experience the event become the agents of the change that it makes possible by acting in fidelity to it and working to bring about an end to the particular transcendental that first conditions their existence.

Ultimately then, the 'event' reveals to a subject her previously unrecognized subjective limitations—by revealing the excess of her selfhood—through giving her a new, shared, and revealed truth that is *ex post facto* read back into her remembered existence prior to the event and transforms it such that she comes to see herself as always having been such a subject and subjected to such a universal truth. At the outset of this chapter, we looked briefly at one of Badiou's examples of the evental subject, namely the evental subject of Saint Paul. I now want to turn to one of Badiou's other examples of this process—that of the French Revolution—in hopes of further clarifying his thought.

As Badiou points out, there are, from the perspective of the historical situation, many differing and scattered causes of (and actors in) the Revolution: "the electors of the General Estates, the peasants of the Great Fear, the *sans-culottes* of the towns, the members of the Convention, the Jacobin Clubs," and so forth.⁵⁵ However, Badiou continues, "the halting point for this dissemination is *the mode in which the Revolution is the central term of the Revolution itself*, that is, the manner in which the conscience of the times . . . filters the entire site through the one of its evental qualification."⁵⁶ The point here is this: as with the case of Saint Paul, the French Revolution is an event because the differences between the individual actors that existed prior to the revolution (the General Estates, the Jacobin clubs, the members of the Convention, etc.) come to be "filtered" through the "one" event, namely the revolution itself. The different classes involved in the revolution came to share the term 'revolutionary,' thus the event revealed a shared truth that was not present initially. Badiou continues, "the peasants are certainly presented in the French situation of 1789–1790, but not *those* peasants of the Great Fear who seized the castles"; the peasants that exist after this event are *changed* by the event.⁵⁷ They became the peasants of the Revolution. This is not only the case for the peasants but for all the prior categories of people (the Jacobins, Convention members, etc.) at the moment of the revolution; these other categories too were emptied of their previous meanings and were henceforth filtered through the one "universal" category—or truth—of the Revolution. It is this category that came to (retroactively) filter each individual's understanding of himself as always having been a member of the one universal 'revolutionary' class.

It is in this way that the political activity that came to fruition in the French Revolution is, according to Badiou, indicative of a 'rupture' with the

existing situation (or world), as founded in an 'event' (here the event of the French Revolution) that acts as a site for the production of a "truth" which is that which is truly 'new' and can have a kind of 'universal' status in that it implicates—or interpellates—*equally* all of those that are involved in it regardless of their seeming differences. This, furthermore, allows individuals to become subjects of the universal truth that is founded in the event and act in fidelity to such truth—which is ultimately to come to be able to act as agents of change against the static pre-evental world. As we now have a good picture of Badiou's understanding of both stasis and change—or the 'two temporalities' of our worlds in Johnston's parlance—we can move, in the next chapter, to a more in-depth discussion of the ways in which Badiou's theory offers a corrective to some of the problems of the Althusserian arguments and an assessment of the success of this corrective.

NOTES

1. See, for example, Peter Hallward, *Badiou: A Subject to Truth* (Minneapolis and London: University of Minnesota Press, 2003), Jason Barker, *Alain Badiou: A Critical Introduction* (London: Pluto Press, 2002) and Adrian Johnston, *Žižek's Ontology: A Transcendental Materialist Theory of Subjectivity* (Evanston: Northwestern University Press, 2008). Each of these books devotes some discussion to connections between Althusser and these thinkers.
2. Adrian Johnston, *Badiou, Žižek, and Political Transformations: The Cadence of Change* (Evanston: Northwestern University Press, 2009).
3. Alain Badiou, *Being and Event*, translated by Oliver Feltham (New York and London: Continuum, 2005).
4. Alain Badiou, *Saint Paul*, translated by Ray Brassier (Stanford: Stanford University Press, 2003), 57.
5. Badiou, *Ethics: An Essay on the Understanding of Evil*, translated by Peter Hallward (New York and London: Verso, 2001), 51.
6. Bruno Bosteels has gone as far as to suggest that Althusser's theory of the aleatory is itself influenced by Badiou's own grappling with the question of the possibility of change. See Bruno Bosteels and Alain Badiou, "Can Change Be Thought? A Dialogue with Alain Badiou" in *Alain Badiou: Philosophy and Its Conditions*, edited by Gabriel Riera (New York: SUNY Press, 2005), 237–262. While Badiou does not deny this claim, I think it is impossible to be sure of the directionality of influence in particular cases such as this, especially since Althusser is not around to be asked. I would rather just point out the shared theoretical point that exists here.
7. Badiou, "The (Re)commencement of Dialectical Materialism" in *The Adventure of French Philosophy*, edited and translated by Bruno Bosteels (New York and London: Verso, 2012), 140.
8. *Ibid.*, 143. Here we can see the connection back to the arguments of chapter one: Dialectical Materialism is the philosophy which allows us to see the ideological nature of the PCF's Lysenkoist view of science.
9. *Ibid.*, 142.
10. *Ibid.*, 144–145.
11. *Ibid.*, 142.
12. *Ibid.*, 146.
13. *Ibid.*, 148–149.

14. Bruno Bosteels, *Badiou and Politics* (Durham and London: Duke University Press, 2011), 54.
15. "Always marked by the possibility of false departures and sudden relapses, this contradictory processing of the difference between science and ideology, as much as between materialism and idealism, is absolutely key to a proper reconstruction of Althusser's philosophy. I would argue moreover, that it is likewise the case for the difference between truth and knowledge, or between fidelity to the event and being as such in the later philosophy and theory of the subject of Badiou." *Ibid.*, 55.
16. Badiou, *Theory of Contradiction* (France: Maspero, 1975), 60–61.
17. Colin Wright, *Badiou in Jamaica* (Victoria: re.press, 2013), 38.
18. Badiou, *Theory of Contradiction*, 60, 65. Quoted in Wright, *Badiou in Jamaica*, 38.
19. Wright, *Badiou in Jamaica*, 36.
20. Mao Zedong "On Contradiction" in *On Practice and Contradiction*, edited by Slavoj Žižek (New York and London: Verso, 2007), 72, my emphasis.
21. Badiou, *Theory of the Subject*, translated by Bruno Bosteels (New York: Continuum, 2009), 26.
22. Karl Marx and Fredrick Engels, *The Communist Manifesto* in *Karl Marx: Selected Writings 2nd Edition*, edited by David McLellan (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2006), 245–271.
23. Badiou, *Theory of the Subject*, 26.
24. *Ibid.*, 26–27.
25. See Marx and Engels, *Manifesto* in McLellen, 250.
26. Badiou, *Theory of the Subject*, 27.
27. Badiou, *Being and Event*, 23–30.
28. *Ibid.*, 24.
29. *Ibid.*
30. Georg Cantor quoted in Michael Hallet, *Cantorian Set Theory and the Limitation of Size: Oxford Logic Guides 10* (New York and Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1984), 41.
31. Peter Hallward, *Badiou: A Subject to Truth* (Minneapolis: University of Minnesota Press, 2003), 69.
32. For Badiou's own discussion of Cohen's proof, see, Alain Badiou, *Number and Numbers*, translated by Robin Mackay (Cambridge and Malden: Polity Press, 2008).
33. Badiou, *Being and Event*, 34.
34. *Ibid.*, 53.
35. *Ibid.*, 55.
36. Sam Gillespie, "Placing the Void: Badiou on Spinoza" in *Angelaki*, Vol. 6, No. 3 (2001), 63–77.
37. *Ibid.*, see especially Gillespie's discussion of this point on page 64.
38. Badiou, *Being and Event*, 24.
39. *Ibid.*
40. *Ibid.*
41. Badiou, *Logics of Worlds*, translated by Alberto Toscano (New York and London: Continuum, 2009), 99. Here he explicitly states that he is replacing the term 'situation' with the term 'world.' Henceforth I will use the terms interchangeably.
42. *Ibid.*
43. *Ibid.*, 101.
44. *Ibid.*, 102.
45. *Ibid.*, 118.
46. *Ibid.*

47. Ibid., 120.
48. Ibid., 114.
49. I will discuss this at length in the next chapter.
50. Badiou, *Logics of Worlds*, 145.
51. Ibid., 328. Here Badiou writes, "In the order of appearing, relation is subordinated to the linked terms, it has no creative capacity."
52. We need not spend time on this point here, but Badiou discusses the change that does take place in a given world in depth in *Logics of Worlds*. See especially pp. 358–360, in which he points out the certain 'changes' are themselves set out by the transcendental of a given world such that the beings which inhabit it do in fact appear to 'change' in their temporal existence but as Badiou points out, "As long as the transcendental regulation remains identical, it is certainly possible to witness considerable variations affecting the same element . . . but these variations are nothing but the immanent movements of appearing, whose possible intensities and amplitude are prescribed by the transcendental." Ibid., 359.
53. See page 62 of this chapter.
54. Badiou, *Logics of Worlds*, 117.
55. Badiou, *Being and Event*, 180.
56. Ibid.
57. Ibid.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Badiou, Alain. *Being and Event*. Translated by Oliver Feltham. New York and London: Continuum, 2005.
- . *Ethics: An Essay on the Understanding of Evil*. Translated by Peter Hallward. New York and London: Verso, 2001.
- . *Logics of Worlds*. Translated by Alberto Toscano. New York and London: Continuum, 2009.
- . *Number and Numbers*. Translated by Robin Mackay. Cambridge and Malden: Polity Press, 2008.
- . "The (Re)commencement of Dialectical Materialism" in *The Adventure of French Philosophy*. Edited and translated by Bruno Bosteels. New York and London: Verso, 2012. 133–170.
- . *Saint Paul*. Translated by Ray Brassier. Stanford: Stanford University Press, 2003.
- . *Theory of Contradiction*. France: Maspero, 1975.
- . *Theory of the Subject*. Translated by Bruno Bosteels. New York: Continuum, 2009.
- Barker, Jason. *Alain Badiou: A Critical Introduction*. London: Pluto Press, 2002.
- Bosteels, Bruno. *Badiou and Politics*. Durham and London: Duke University Press, 2011.
- and Alain Badiou. "Can Change Be Thought? A Dialogue with Alain Badiou" in *Alain Badiou: Philosophy and Its Conditions*. Edited by Gabriel Riera. New York: SUNY Press, 2005. 237–260.
- Gillespie, Sam. "Placing the Void: Badiou on Spinoza" in *Angelaki*. Vol. 6, No. 3 (2001). 63–77.
- Hallet, Michael. *Cantorian Set Theory and the Limitation of Size: Oxford Logic Guides 10*. New York and Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1984.
- Hallward, Peter. *Badiou: A Subject to Truth*. Minneapolis and London: University of Minnesota Press, 2003.

- Johnston, Adrian. *Badiou, Žižek, and Political Transformations: The Cadence of Change*. Evanston: Northwestern University Press, 2009.
- . *Žižek's Ontology: A Transcendental Materialist Theory of Subjectivity*. Evanston: Northwestern University Press, 2008.
- McLellan, David Ed. *Karl Marx: Selected Writings 2nd Edition*. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2006.
- Wright, Colin. *Badiou in Jamaica*. Victoria: re.press, 2013.
- Zedong, Mao. "On Contradiction" in *On Practice and Contradiction*. Edited by Slavoj Žižek. New York and London: Verso, 2007. 67–102.

4 Badiou as Structuralist, or the Idealism of Formalism

We have already begun to see how the young Badiou partially parts ways with Althusser insofar as he offers, via his reading of Mao, an argument to the effect that the Althusserian subject of interpellation must be seen as a split subject, at once interpellated by a given set up conjunctural apparatuses, and at the same time capable—however tenuously—of exerting influence on the very structures in which that subject find its existence. It is also, as we have seen, at this time that we begin to see Badiou's move away from thinking of Althusserian subjects as subjects and toward his beginning to think of them as mere individuals and the reservation of the term 'subject' for those individuals who not only have the potential to exert influence but in fact come to be able to do so through the process of subjectivization via the event. Recall here, as an example of this, the claim in 1975's *Theory of the Subject* that "every subject is political. This is why there are few subjects and rarely any politics."¹

This conception of the subject of course, does not get its full development until Badiou's work after 1975 and into the present. Acknowledging then, this long trajectory of the development and the shifting response to Althusser, we can begin to productively understand Badiou's later thought in its response to Althusser—and its connection to his early work—by looking at it in relation to his comments in a recent interview with Bruno Bosteels in which Badiou points out that much of his work over the course of his life has been an attempt to unite the disparate thought of Althusserian anti-humanism and Sartrean subjective freedom. It is, in a very important sense, around these two poles that the entire Badiouan edifice is built. As Badiou states in this interview:

If I think of those who have been Althusserians, Lacanians, and Maoists—which was the normal itinerary for the militant intelligentsia from 1968 to 1972—they were all a bit younger than me. So what did this mean? It meant that they had not had the time to be Sartreans . . . I found in Sartre's theory of practical freedom, and particularly in the subjectivized Marxism that he was already trying to produce, something with which to engage myself politically, in spite of everything, in the situation. This did

not keep me from taking my distance from Sartre, nor from participating in that generation of mine which indeed started to take a major interest in the question of structure. But in the end, I entered this debate from the point of view of Sartre . . . This meant that against all odds, I have always been concerned in a privileged way by the question of how something could still be called 'subject' within the most rigorous conditions possible of the investigations of structure.²

In attempting to both retain what he thinks Althusser (and structuralism) gets right (namely the conception of the overdetermined nature of a given conjuncture or a world in which we find ourselves and the identities that attend it) but also overcome the problems of such a conception (namely the inability understand and account for the possibility of [radical or revolutionary] change), Badiou seeks to unite these two traditions. Thus Badiou theorizes the event and the two temporalities of stasis and change.

I.

In regard to stasis, as we saw in detail in the previous chapter, in Badiou's later work, we get a kind of mathematized Althusserian/structuralist theoretic of a series of "worlds" or "situations" which present themselves as de-subjectified, fully determined, objective totalities in which everything is presented as if it is in its proper place, as determined by the structure or transcendental logic that conditions a given world/situation in its constructing of the relations of identity and difference amongst 'objects.' However, as Badiou takes pains to argue, such presentation conceals that which might act to disrupt it in the form of the 'nothingness' or 'void,' described as a fully positive—though subtracted, or un-presented—moment of a given world. Because, as we have seen, for Badiou 'the one is not' but only comes to be in the 'operation' which counts-as-one beings in a given world, there is always something which is unable to be brought under the law of the count except as that which is subtracted (which is a form of objectification). It is this that, as we have also seen for Badiou, allows the possibility of change via its revelation in the moment of the event.

The event shows to those humans who are able to recognize it the normally hidden 'not-all' of a given world (the void of that world). This revelation, if properly experienced (that is, if it is to become an event), also then reveals the counting operation or transcendental logic to be just that: an operation which has conditioned apparent objects and identities, but is itself not necessary nor totalizing. In other words, the event reveals the fact that the world's logic is merely contingent, and not all there is. This then allows for the possibility that those who experience the event shed the logic of the world out of which they emerge, losing along the way, the very set of differences and identities that first marked their awareness. It is here that agency

is born for Badiou: those who become 'subjects' do so by being, in Althusserian language, 'interpellated' by the event, which they then, as we have also discussed, work to integrate into existence with the goal of changing the very fabric of that existence to match the new world that they themselves have already come to know.

What is important to see here (as has already briefly been pointed out at the beginning of chapter 3) is that it is not just the event itself that is important for the theory of change, those who are subjectified by it are also key to the process. The happening of the event is, of course, indispensable, but it is the ability of the human to be subjectified by the event, and the commitment to the 'truth' of the event that is cultivated by those who are subjectified, that is necessary for the process of change to take place. So, it must be the case that the human be the kind of being that is capable of being subjectified by the event; that is, the human must be the kind of being that is capable of shedding the identity that she comes to have as a result of the world that she first finds herself in. Though it is true that, for Althusser (and for structuralism), we are the kinds of beings whose 'identity' shifts and changes as institutions and practices shift, change, and interpellate us in various and different ways (we are, in other words, the kinds of beings whose nature is not fixed), Althusser's theory on its own—as we have already seen Badiou point out—cannot allow for the freedom from the conjuncture and its ways of determining both individuals and objects, that Badiou seeks.

For as we saw in the chapters one and two of this book, on Althusser's account of things, humans are always trapped in, and constructed by, the ideologies in which they participate. And these ideologies, though in some sense built out of and sustained by human activity, are never owned by, or in the control of individuals. Once again, for Althusser, subjects find their existence within the conjuncture itself (they are not oppositional to it). Ideology is what regulates and controls the understanding and behavior of individuals. Even Althusser's heroic attempt at maintaining a distinction between ideology (objectivity, necessity, determination) and science (the recognition of ideology as historical and non-necessary) collapses under the weight of his understanding of the insidious nature of ideology and its workings (even 'science' is, or quickly becomes, infected by ideology such that the difference between science and ideology is shrunken to such a small point that it becomes difficult to maintain the distinction, and all becomes tainted by the ideological). Recall again Althusser's statement in this regard (quoted first at the end of chapter two):

. . . We know that there is no *pure* theoretical practice, no perfectly transparent science which throughout history as a science will always be preserved, by I know not what Grace, from the taints of idealism, that is, of the ideologies which besiege it; we know that 'pure' science only exists on condition that it continually frees itself from the ideology which occupies it, haunts it, or lies in wait for it. The inevitable price of

this purification and liberation is a continuous struggle with ideology itself, that is, against idealism . . .³

Though in his earliest work, as we have seen, Badiou makes sense of this via the conception of the ‘impure’ relation between science and ideology, he is nonetheless unsatisfied by this answer as he moves forward. This is where the Sartrean theory of subjective freedom becomes important for Badiou. As Nina Power argues, we can best see this connection *vis-à-vis* Sartre’s conception of the group-in-fusion found in *The Critique of Dialectical Reason*.⁴ Power explains this connection by first pointing out that Sartre’s opposition between the status of ‘sociality’ and the status of the ‘group-in-fusion’ (the autonomous collectivity—autonomous in a Kantian sense—as free from external determinants) can be mapped onto the Badiouan distinction between the counted-as-one non-subjects of the world and the subjectivized agents of change that exist in the wake of the event. She does this by explaining that for Sartre, the former is “always on the side of the order and antagonism that constitutes capitalist atomization, inertia and seriality,” while the latter is, in effect, that which results from a ‘disalienation’ that extracts those who come to constitute the ‘group’ from the individuated seriality of the social that first defines the existence of the group’s members.⁵ In other words, for Sartre, the group-in-fusion is a break or a rupture with the determined nature of the social, and it is this that makes the group into a (political) subjectivity capable of affecting change (albeit only briefly on Sartre’s accounting of things). Sartre uses the example of a collection of people waiting at a bus stop to indicate the ‘serially’ determined nature of the social as opposed to the unity of the ‘group-in-fusion.’ Regarding this example Sartre writes:

To begin with, it should be noted that we are concerned here with a plurality of isolations: these people do not care about or speak to one another and, in general, they do not look at one another; they exist side by side alongside a bus stop. At this level it is worth noting that their isolation is not an inert statute (or the simple reciprocal exteriority of organisms); rather, it is *actually* lived in everyone’s project as its negative structure. In other words, the isolation of the organism, as the impossibility of uniting with Others in an organic totality, is revealed through the isolation which everyone lives as the provisional negation of their reciprocal relations with Others.⁶

For Sartre, our lived experience of the relations between one another (that is, our lived experience of the ‘social’) is filtered through the serialized isolation between individuals. It is this serialization that structures the world in which we find ourselves and militates against any unification amongst individuals in our everyday quotidian existence. Further it also militates against many forms of true subjective agency as it is the case that the serialized

isolation between individuals in a given social structure is what (re)produces and gives support to the very structures in which we find ourselves, and as long as we remain serialized in this way, we are, as Sartre argues, impotent in relation them.⁷ However, unification does happen. It happens through *praxis* for Sartre. We can find ourselves taken out of the sphere of serialization in the moments in which we come to be ‘fused’ with one another in pursuit of a common goal or a common work.⁸ It is in this that we become autonomous in the sense that, in the collective unity produced by the ‘group-in-fusion’ we are extracted from the individuated seriality that defines the social world in which we first become aware of ourselves.

Power continues, explaining that, as with Badiou’s conception of the subject, (which is itself also importantly non-individuated), for Sartre, “the group-in-fusion, is not a ‘return’ to some previous essence, as a simple re-reading of alienation would have it,” and moreover, “the group-in-fusion as Sartre describes it, also involves a kind of immanent anti-organicism, in the sense that the project that unites the members of the group cannot be seen from the outside (nor for that matter, can the group as a whole be comprehended).”⁹ Meaning that the only thing that holds the group together in a unity is the group’s own activity and the experience of those who make up the group; the external observer cannot identify the group as such a collectivity because there is nothing external to mark it off from other collections of individuals which remain serially determined.

Sartre’s attempts at making sense of the emergence of such groups out of (and in opposition to) the conjuncture is thus, on Power’s reading, both materialist (insofar as the group is a result of, or only comes about in, existence [i.e., it does not pre-exist its coming to be]), and anti-humanist (insofar as it is not the realization of a pre-existent essence). But, Sartre’s conception of this is also at the same time a kind of humanism, as Power points out, insofar as it is only the decision, or the commitment of those humans that act as a group in Sartre’s sense, that sustain the existence of the group itself. Thus, she dubs the Sartrean theory of the group-in-fusion (quite rightly) a kind of “anti-humanist humanism whose concern is the subject, rather than an idealist or essentializing humanism.”¹⁰

II.

It is this “antihumanist humanism” of the Sartrean subject that serves as the model for Badiou’s own theory of the subject as the oppositional force founded by the event. So, Badiou’s use of the Sartrean conception of the process of change, which is initiated by the group-in-fusion over against the seriality of the social is what allows for Badiou to account for the possibility of radical change (and true subjective agency) in a way that Althusser cannot, while at the same time, allowing Badiou to retain, as we have also seen, much of the Althusserian edifice. In this we can see the concept of the impure

relation still at work insofar as Badiou in this context again considers a kind of ‘impure’ relation between anti-humanism and humanism.

In Badiou, however, subjective agency—though it has the force of change that results from the agent’s extraction from the (ideological) world/situation in which she first finds herself—remains thoroughly bounded by and to the taking place of the event. Though it is true that the Badiouan subject gains autonomy, she only does so from the existing world’s logic. The Badiouan revolutionary subject is still determined in her behavior and her being: it is just that this determination comes from her recognition of the event and the fidelity to it that is provoked in her by it. So the Badiouan subject remains in a very important way, a proto-structuralist and fully materially generated subject, albeit one whose identity is conditioned by a relation to a happening that disappears as quickly as it appears rather than the structure or world. We now can turn to a discussion of this and why it poses a problem for Badiou’s own materialism. As we will see, Badiou’s account of the nature of worlds, their transcendental logics, and his account of change via a structuralized Sartreanism brings his theory dangerously close to the very kind of structuralist idealism Althusser himself was wary of.

First, however, for further evidence apropos the structuralist nature of the Badiouan subject, recall the last line of the long quote referenced at the beginning of this chapter, in which Badiou himself points out the structuralist nature of his enterprise. There he claims that he is interested in making sense of, as he puts it, “what can be called subject” while remaining fully within a structuralist framework.¹¹ Further, in *Logics of Worlds* commenting on Deleuze’s simultaneous adoption—via what Deleuze terms Sartre’s conception of the “impersonal transcendental field” of the group-in-fusion—and critique of Sartre’s conception of the subject, Badiou registers his agreement with the Deleuzian claim to the effect that:

Sartre was prevented from thinking through all the consequences of his idea because he continued to tie the impersonal field to a self-consciousness . . . He did not expose the subject to the chance of a pure Outside. One of the names of the Outside is ‘event.’ That is why the event, as that to which the power of a thought devotes itself and/or that from which this power stems, has after Sartre become a term common to most contemporary philosophers.¹²

In other words, Sartre remained faithful, in Power’s terminology, to a “disalienation” that is provoked by an experience of being-with others, or finding oneself enmeshed in an impersonal ‘we’ as opposed to the seriality of the ‘I,’ but this provocation comes, for Sartre, from the being-with another itself and not from anything material, or external to consciousness on Badiou’s account. So, for Sartre, though the true (Sartrean/Badiouan) subject emerges in existence—and is, hence, materially generated in this way—she only emerges by recognizing herself in the other (another consciousness).

Sartre is explicit about this in his description of the group-in-fusion that he saw as constituted in the storming of the Bastille: “Everyone continued to see himself in the Other, *but saw himself there as himself*, that is to say, in this case, as a totalization in himself of the Parisian population, by the sabre blow or the rifle shot which would kill him.”¹³

The Sartrean ‘impersonal field,’ as Deleuze puts it, is constituted in reference to a kind of mirroring effect in which each individual steps out of his or her own ‘personality’ and recognizes herself in the other, and thus the unified consciousness of the group appears through the shedding of the individuated consciousnesses of those involved. This is, as pointed out above, for Sartre, accomplished through, and in reference to, consciousness alone. As Badiou laments, Sartre did not think through the further foundations of the unification experience itself and the conditions upon which such an experience rests. If he had, on Badiou’s (and Deleuze’s) account, his analysis would have bottomed out in the event. But for that one needs the anti-humanism afforded by both Althusser and structuralism. One needs to think beyond consciousness, to the structures that condition it for both the consciousness of the serialized multiple individual and the “impersonal” unified, agent-like, subjectivity of the group-in-fusion. Thus, though the Sartrean subject is material in the sense that it is generated in existence (as Power points out), it is not materialist in the sense of being itself conditioned by that which is other than consciousness, or the material ‘event’ that interpellates the subject, which as Badiou claims, is the mark of a true materialism. This is to say, whereas for Sartre the ‘event’ would be the *result* of the unification that is the group-in-fusion (the ‘event’ of the storming of the Bastille, for instance) that unifies disparate consciousnesses into a force capable of effecting such an event, for Badiou, “The event cannot *result* from the passion of a body, nor can it differ in kind from these actions and passions. On the contrary, an active body adequate to the new present *is an effect of the event*.”¹⁴ The “active body” is thus a *structural effect* of the event, not that which conditions it. Another way to put this same point, might be to say that for Badiou, the event is the material phenomenon that underlies the operation which comes to count-as-one the subject, who then works to reorient the consistent multiplicity of a given world to mirror the awareness she now has.

Before moving to a critique of Badiou’s conception, it bears mentioning that Badiou’s renovation of the Sartrean theory comes it part from his relation to and readings of Althusser and Mao (as I have already discussed at length) but also, as we will see, from his encounter with Lacan. Badiou describes his progression in this direction quite nicely in yet another recent interview:

At the beginning of the 1960’s . . . I was, as I’ve said, a convinced Sartrean. But with the help of Althusser, the time came for me to break with phenomenology . . . Why this inevitable break? From its invention by Husserl, phenomenology folded the thought of the subject back onto a

philosophy of consciousness. The subject is confounded with consciousness and the transparent comprehension of what happens to me.¹⁵

We can, of course see this point operative in the Sartrean theory as described above (and Badiou's own critique of it). Badiou continues in the same interview:

In order to free up thought of a revolutionary emancipation supported by science (our common program at the time) we had to extract ourselves from this phenomenological model of the subject . . . To take leave of it, we could lean on the human sciences, scientific objectivity, and logico-mathematical formalism. Against phenomenology, structuralism represented a lifeline . . . The structuralist constellation finds its completion in "theoretical antihumanism" to use Althusser's crucial phrase or in the "death of man" to cite Foucault.¹⁶

Again, this should be more or less familiar territory for us thus far. Furthermore, as I have argued above, though Badiou rejects the free subject of consciousness, he also does not want to go as far as either Foucault or Althusser in proclaiming the complete subjugation of the subject, and so it is through Lacan that Badiou sees a way of finally uniting these traditions:

Lacan . . . does not go as far as the hard structuralists . . . who consider the category of the subject to be the mere avatar of a defunct metaphysics. This is because for him, the subject remains at the heart of clinical experience. So Lacan saves the subject in the midst of a full on structuralist offensive against it. "His" subject is certainly subjugated to the signifying chain; it is divided, unbeknownst to itself, split, exposed to a radical alterity (what Lacan calls the discourse of the Other). But for him it remains coherent and even necessary to propose a theory of the subject.¹⁷

I will have much more to say about Lacan and Badiou's relation to Lacan (in contrast to Žižek's) in the chapters that follow this one but for now we can note that what Badiou says here is ultimately that Lacan functions as the mediating term between Althusser and the 'structuralist' view of a completely subjugated subject and Sartre and the phenomenological/existential free subject, which, as he goes on to point out, allows him to retain a conception of the subject while also retaining the important Althusserian insights. Briefly put (and again to be explored further later in the book), Badiou's thinking here is that insofar as the Lacanian conception of the symbolic, as that within which individuals first come to consciousness, is itself an emergent phenomenon and tied to a given historical conjuncture, it is also importantly fraught with incompleteness and slippages through which individuals become able to break with and change the order. In his early work we can

see this view in his employment of the Maoist conception of the dialectical splitting that is present both on the side of the structure and the side of the subject.¹⁸ It seems, however, that the mature Badiou has, as I wish to now argue, a problem maintaining this view. We should now turn to a discussion of these remaining issues and the not-so-materialist outcomes of Badiou's mature thought.

III.

Recall the Althusserian critique, discussed in chapter two, of Levi-Straussian style structuralism. The basic point that Althusser makes there is that Levi-Strauss and his followers become "traditional philosophers" (that is, idealists) the moment that they forget the connection to the specific historical moment in which their theories are produced. That is, when they forget the conjunctural nature of the foundations of the theory and begin to posit structuralism as an ahistorical scientific 'truth' of social organization and in so doing, make the ideological (and idealist) mistake of conferring a kind of abstract subjectivity on structure itself. This is, of course, the result of the continually present danger of the impurity of theory as pointed out in the Althusser's statement of this problem referenced earlier in this chapter. Something of a similar order can be brought to bear on the Badiouan edifice as given in *Being and Event* and beyond, and in so doing we can show that Badiou's account here suffers from some of the same problems (though on a different scale) that Althusser attributes to the traditional structuralist account. It is precisely this problem that pushes Badiou away from a full-fledged materialism.

I am, of course, not the first to take up such a line of argument in relation to Badiou's thought, and I wish to begin by looking at two other versions of this claim before turning to some additional ways that we can see the danger of idealism emerge for Badiou. We have, thus far, been talking about temporality in Badiou in relation to two modes: stasis and change; but there is another way of thinking about this theme. We can, along with Peter Osborne, translate our terms for Badiouan temporality into structuralist terms: synchrony and diachrony.¹⁹ Here Osborne writes that for Badiou:

Time is reduced to two dimensions—synchrony and diachrony—and diachrony is no more than a serial ordering of synchronically defined situations. Situations are considered 'historical' in which there is 'at least one evental site' . . . but there is no unity to these situations, no 'evental situation' and hence no history.²⁰

Badiou's ontology is ahistorical insofar as, on the one hand, it is concerned with exposing the formal or synchronic properties of the ordering relations between objects found any given world/situation that make up the

'structure' of those worlds. On the other hand, Badiou's ontology is concerned with the historical (the diachronic) insofar as it attempts to theorize those worlds in which an event arises and the properties of the subjects that are created by them, but as Osborne points out above, since there is no 'evental' world because events are, as theorized by Badiou, things that appear and quickly recede in normally synchronically ordered worlds, history just is the history of ahistorically (and mathematically) structured worlds punctuated by the occasional 'event' and the subjects that arrive in its wake, and thus it is the job of the philosopher to theorize the structures of these worlds insofar as they yield both stasis and the possibility of change. Osborne continues: ". . . It is precisely the idea that *philosophy* is to be pursued, systematically, through a thinking of mathematics that is Badiou's primary classical, rationalist and idealist trait—its return to Plato—however modern the maths."²¹

So for Osborne, Badiou's mature philosophy returns to idealism because it rejects the diachronic and favors the synchronic or, in other words, because it seeks to understand and analyze the structures of worlds/situations synchronically and, thus, independently of history. It is not interested in the connections between the structures of a given world and that world's history—it doesn't find the history of the situation to be important for the production of either the given world or the process of change—the world does not produce history; rather, the world is nothing but a static de-historicized conglomeration of subjectless objects that gain their status as objects through the structural relations between one another imposed by the (again non-subjective) transcendental. The event is what produces history though (oddly) it too is ahistorical insofar as it is divorced from the de-historicized history of the world in which it appears as we have seen: though it arises within a situation/world, the event is not something that is itself conditioned by it (and so cannot be the subject of philosophical investigation, until after its happening).

I would like to push Osborne's analysis further here and point out that the formal synchronic description of worlds that Badiou gives us throughout both of his major mature works comes dangerously close to an idealism insofar as he, at the synchronic level, reifies the mathematical structure that he uses to analyze various worlds in both their synchronic nature and their harboring of potential diachrony. That is, the mathematical structure, for Badiou, becomes an ideological—and hence ideal—blind spot in his otherwise materialist theory. This is precisely the point that Adrian Johnston also develops further in relation to the Badiouan mathematic ontology and the concept of the count-as-one respectively.

IV.

Johnston points out that when faced with concerns about the properly materialist nature of Badiou's thought, given that abstract mathematical structures are considered to be the foundations of ontology. Some of

Badiou's defenders—Johnston cites Fabian Tarby here—point to the fact that “Badiou rejects the portrayal of mathematics as a fabrication of the human mind overlaid onto the objective world,” so ultimately, “Badiou's mathematical ontology is materialist insofar as mathematical entities and configurations are viewed, by Badiou-the-Platonist as enjoying ontological weight, as participating in real being.”²² Johnston's initial response to this is worth quoting at length:

Believing in the ontological reality of mathematics does not make one a materialist. Put differently, metaphysical realism is not equivalent to materialism—quite the contrary. Metaphysical realists tend to be, not coincidentally or by accident, idealists. At least in glancing back through the history of philosophy, one discerns a strong correlation between materialism and the diametric opposite of metaphysical realism, namely nominalism.²³

If Badiou is a realist about mathematical entities, then his materialism is undercut by this belief, as it forces him into a position of accepting both the reality and the priority of abstract, formal, or ideal entities. Johnston goes on to critique Badiou's well-known rejection of the life sciences in favor of the formalism of pure mathematics as further entrenching this problematic idealist materialism via Badiou's recent comments on the status of physics and its application of mathematics to empirical. Badiou argues that the life sciences (represented here by physics) are stuck at the level of presentation, only a pure mathematics can get to the ontological. First here is Badiou:

... The more you decompose the concept of matter into its most elementary constituents, the more you move into a field of reality which can only be named or identified with increasingly complex mathematical operations. “Matter” would simply be, immediately after being, the most general possible name of the presented (of “what is presented”) . . . Matter, in the sense in which it is at stake in physics, is matter as enveloping any particular presentation—and I am materialist in the sense that I think that any presentation is material. If we consider the word ‘matter,’ the content of the word ‘matter,’ matter comes immediately after being.²⁴

It is on the basis of the distinction drawn here between the domain of pure mathematics, the study of being-as-such (ontology), the ‘applied’ mathematics of physics (namely, ‘matter’), or the particular collection of objects and relations found in presented worlds that Johnston is able to further call Badiou's professed materialism into question:

What raises serious questions and difficulties in this context is the firm line of demarcation partitioning being and matter (instead of “thought and matter”), a line drawn in accordance with the full-fledged

mathematization of ontology. Moreover, this line . . . indeed does end up segregating “impure” empirical disciplines, keeping them outside the enclosure of ontology properly speaking. And to Badiou’s disadvantage, this is where Tarby’s previously critiqued and utterly inadequate defense of the materialist credentials of the mathematical ontology of Badiou-the-Platonist returns with a vengeance: the manner in which Badiou differentiates between *L’être* and *la matière* that is tied up with a Platonic ontology that, if deemed to be materialist, renders the very opposition between materialism and idealism entirely null and void. How is this not metaphysical realism, an otherworldly doctrine inextricably intertwined with idealist spiritualism?²⁵

Once the specter of such an ‘idealist spiritualism’ haunting Badiouan materialism *vis-à-vis* Platonist metaphysical realism is raised we can, along with Johnston, identify the ways in which Badiou’s twin concepts of the count-as-one and the de-subjectified transcendental are also complicit in idealism’s continued grip on Badiou’s philosophy.

As Johnston points out some of Badiou’s critics (Johnston included) have raised questions about the status of the ‘operation’ that is the count-as-one.²⁶ Recall that, the count-as-one is the always already present ‘law’ that structures given situations, identifying what is ‘presented’ in a situation (and in what ways presentation takes place). That is, the count-as-one, at least in *Being and Event*, is the operation that makes the inconsistency of being-qua-being into objects or consistent multiples, thus it defines the status of objects that are presented. However, as these critics argue, since Badiou himself denies that the count-as-one is a ‘being’ and gives it rather, the strange—and unexplained—status of an ‘operation’ (one that is, again, always already in effect in presentation), this all-important concept seems to be, in Johnston’s words, “an ethereal, spectral, operation of unification” that is real-yet-abstract and hence problematically idealist in line with the realist idealism outlined above.²⁷

In *Logics of Worlds*, as we saw in the previous chapter, Badiou uses the concept of the count-as-one much less, replacing it with the idea of the a-subjective ‘transcendental’ (or the transcendental logic) as that which stands in for and serves the same function as the count-as-one of *Being and Event*. The transcendental is that around which a given world and its objects are structured much like the law that is defined by the counting operation. But here, the transcendental, rather than being described as an ‘operation,’ is itself included in that world that it structures (rather than being an operator that in some sense pre-exists the world that is structured by it). As Johnston notes, this has been seen as a sign of a move away from the problematic idealism inherent to the concept of the count-as-one by some of Badiou’s readers. Johnston cited Alberto Toscano here:

Toscano believes that [the] anxieties about Badiou’s less-than-fully materialist status *circa* 1988 subsequently are assuaged in two ways

after 1988: First, the 2006 conceptualization of the transcendental is purportedly less, as it were, mysteriously faceless than the anonymous count-for-one; second, the immanence of each transcendental regime to its respective world supposedly (re)-secures Badiouan thought as a form of strict materialism.²⁸

However, Johnston also rightly points out that Badiou doesn't give up the count-as-one in 2006, the concept remains in use in *Logics of Worlds*; and when it is used, it is at a crucial moment in the description of the status of objects presented in a given world. Speaking of the nature of objects in *Logics of Worlds* recall that, as we saw in the previous chapter, Badiou claims that:

It goes without saying after all, that a being . . . can appear in different worlds. It would be absurd to think that there is an intrinsic link between a given multiple and a given world. The 'worlding' of a formal being, which is its being-there or appearing, is ultimately a logical operation: the access to a local guarantee of its identity. This operation may be produced in numerous different ways, and it may imply entirely distinct worlds as the grounds for the further operations it elicits.²⁹

The point—as we also discussed in the last chapter—is that the appearance, or the being-there, of a given object in a given world does not, for the Badiou of *Logics of Worlds*, exhaust the object. A given object can be worlded in multiple ways, by multiple transcendentals, and insofar as the particular appearance of a given object in a given world is defined by the relations that develop between it and other objects, the appearance of that object is (as we pointed out in the previous chapter in relation to the identity of humans in given worlds) defined in its being-there by other beings, or other objects. This defining, however, does not fully define and circumscribe the object; it is also defined in this by being other than what it is outside of a given world.

The object is thus split in its being worlded. It both is what it appears to be insofar as its appearance is defined by the relational structure, and it is, importantly, not all that it is in appearance, or as Johnston puts the point, “The Badiouan object is never entirely situated in and structured by its respective world without reserve (or in Lacanese, “not all” of the object is in its world).”³⁰ Though the object's nature exceeds the appearance, the object is made consistent through the subtraction of all that is not relationally consistent with other objects in that world, but as Badiou notes (and as we also made clear in the last chapter) this subtraction does not destroy the excess of the object or its nature outside of the relational structuring of the transcendental:

The key to thinking appearing, when it comes to a singular being, lies in being able to determine, at one and the same time, the self-difference

which makes it so being-there is not being-qua-being, and the difference from others which makes it so that being there, or the law of the world which is shared by these others, does not abolish being-qua-being.³¹

Thus, the object straddles the line between the inconsistent multiplicity of being-qua-being and the consistent appearing of the being-there of the world. As Johnston puts it, “the object as an onto-logical conjunction of *l'être en tant qu' être* and *être-là* is the condensed crossroads at which this interaction between being and appearing takes place, an interaction in which appearing comes to leave its mark on being itself.”³² It is here that the concept of the count-as-one operation reappears in *Logics of Worlds* the appearance of the object in-world, as a ‘one’ or a consistent multiplicity, is described by Badiou as an “atom of appearing” which is, as Johnston points out, defined (in part) in the ‘Dictionary of Concepts’ at the end of *Logics of Worlds* with reference to the count-as-one: the “atom (of appearing)” is “the instance of the One in appearing, and therefore, the instance of what counts as one in the object.”³³

Leaving aside a discussion of the first part of this definition, we can see that the count-as-one, thus, remains an important concept for Badiou as it continues to play a crucial role in the definition of objects as they are in presentation or as they are in-world. This is also in part why in outlining the mature Badiouan edifice in the previous chapter I see it as unproblematic to use this term and the Badiouan transcendental interchangeably (more on this in a moment). Further, though Badiou continues to use the concept of the count-as-one in this way in *Logics of Worlds* it remains a mysterious abstract-yet-real concept. As Johnston claims, “It remains troublingly unexplained who or what performs this enigmatic, mysterious operation as well as from where it comes.”³⁴

Returning now to the theme of the connections between the criticisms of Badiou’s account of the social and the processes of stasis and change registered by both Osborne and Johnston, and the criticisms that Althusser launches against the structuralists of his day, these can be aligned if we consider how it is that what is identified as problematic by both of Badiou’s critics is the portions of Badiou’s theory that remain idealist “abstractions” which Badiou relies on to serve critical functions in his mature system. Nothing more needs to be said about the idealism inherent to the metaphysical realist position in mathematics (even though, according to this view mathematical entities are ‘real’ they remain formal immaterial entities, and are thus ideal). In addition to the problems identified by Johnston in relation to count-as-one operation, we can add here in an Althusserian vein, that because Badiou is insufficiently aware on the uncritical reification of this concept, it comes to have the same kind of a-subjective subjective agency that the concept of structure had for those whose structuralism became, as Althusser argues, infected with ideology (and hence idealism).

Recall these arguments as we discussed them in chapter two: Althusser argues that for many the all-important concept of 'structure,' in its being reified and uninterrogated, becomes an ideological impediment to a truly scientific (and materialist) understanding of the conjuncture. In the same way, insofar as the count-as-one remains uninterrogated, it becomes endowed with a quasi-intelligence as that which ensures the ordering of multiples across situations/worlds. Further, apropos the attempted overcoming of the problems inherent to the concept of the count-as-one by replacing it with the concept of a de-subjectified transcendental, as Johnston has convincingly shown, the transcendental itself is still tied to the count-as-one operation and as such is undergirded by the remaining idealist abstraction. In this way, the count-as-one becomes exactly the kind of ideal 'metaphysical invariant' that the young Badiou accused Althusser of maintaining in his conception of structural causality.³⁵ So, returning to the philosophical itinerary that Badiou gives us in the pair of interviews discussed above, it seems that the crucial problem is that he has, at least in *Being and Event* and *Logics of Worlds*, failed to make use of Lacan as the mediator between Sartre and Althusser in the way that he claims that he does (more on this in the following chapters).

Readers of Badiou such as Bosteels and Wright have taken issue with the kind of reading of Badiou's mature work that I (and Johnston) give in this chapter. And they do so on the grounds that reading only the mature work in a fashion that is disconnected from the earlier work is one of the main reasons that people come to the kinds of conclusions that I have here.³⁶ Speaking, for instance, almost directly to the kind of charges leveled at Badiou's mature work here, Bosteels writes:

Many critics argue that this is precisely what Badiou himself ends up doing, when especially in his later work following *Being and Event*, after abandoning a more traditional dialectical view, he is seen as setting up a rigid divide along Kantian (perhaps even pre-Kantian) lines between the world of phenomena and the realm of things in themselves or, along a more Sartrean lineage, between being and consciousness qua pure nothingness.³⁷

Bosteels of course, like Wright, argues that we must not read the new in isolation from the old, that we must in fact, read Badiou's mature work *through the lens* of the early work and that in doing so we are able to see how it is that the mature texts are still working to articulate the concerns of the early work. Recall again Bosteels' provocation, cited in chapter three when discussing Badiou's notion of the impure relation in Althusser's work between science and ideology, to the effect that we should read the conception of a necessary impurity (in connection with his Maoist musings on the contradictory splits within the dialectic) across Badiou's oeuvre. If we could do such a thing then it would be possible to see how it is that Lacan plays the mediating role Badiou ascribes him in the interviews. Then we could see

that there is not such a strict division between the synchronic and diachronic in Badiou's mature as Osborn argues. The event itself would in fact not be ahistorical in the ways described above but rather have a place within a given situation/world insofar as such worlds would be impure and dialectically split. There is, I think, much that is right in Bosteels' argument here. One can see this just in reflecting on much of what I have said above: it is true that for Badiou a world/situation is never totalizing, it always contains that which is unrepresented (as subtracted), and so forth. The problem is that Bosteels' answer does not cover the further, and main, difficulty that both Johnston and I identify here: that of the status of the count-as-one. Even if we agree with Bosteels that there is no strict cleavage between being and event, or being and subject, even if we read the early Badiou back into the mature Badiou (and I think we should do this: here Bosteels and I agree), we still have the problem of the external nature of the counting operation that itself, seems to stand outside all and any material worlds/situations.

NOTES

1. Badiou, *Theory of the Subject*, translated by Bruno Bosteels (New York and London, Continuum, 2009b), 27. We know, of course that in his more recent work, Subjects aren't merely political: they can also be found in science, art, and love, but again, this view is not worked out until *Being and Event* and beyond.
2. Alain Badiou and Bruno Bosteels, "Can Change Be Thought?: An Interview with Alain Badiou" in *Alain Badiou: Philosophy and its Conditions*, edited by Gabriel Reira (New York: SUNY Press, 2005), 242.
3. Louis Althusser, *For Marx*, translated by Ben Brewster (New York and London: Verso, 2005), 170.
4. Nina Power, "The Truth of Humanity: The Collective Political Subject in Sartre and Badiou" in *Pli: The Warwick Journal of Philosophy*, Vol. 20 (2009), 1–27.
5. *Ibid.*, 11–12.
6. Jean-Paul Sartre, *The Critique of Dialectical Reason: Volume 1*, translated by Alan Sheridan-Smith (New York and London: Verso, 2004), 256.
7. See, for example, Sartre's analysis of the Marxian theme of the fetishism of commodities wherein our impotence in relation to the price of commodities is determined by the serialized nature of consumption in the capitalist social structure. *Ibid.*, 321–323.
8. Sartre, like Badiou, looks to the French Revolution as an example of this. *Ibid.*, 354–363.
9. Power, "The Truth of Humanity," 12.
10. *Ibid.*
11. See note 1 of this chapter.
12. Badiou, *Logics of Worlds*, translated by Alberto Toscano (New York and London, Continuum, 2009a), 381.
13. Sartre, *Critique of Dialectical Reason: Volume 1*, 354, emphasis mine.
14. Badiou, *Logics of Worlds*, 385.
15. Badiou and Elisabeth Roudinesco, *Jacques Lacan Past and Present: A Dialogue*, translated by Jason E. Smith (New York: Columbia, 2014), 7.

16. Ibid.
17. Ibid., 8–9.
18. See chapter three.
19. Peter Osborne, “Neo-Classic: Alain Badiou’s *Being and Event*” in *Radical Philosophy: A Journal of Socialist and Feminist Philosophy*, Vol. 142 (March–April 2007), 19–29.
20. Ibid.
21. Ibid.
22. Adrian Johnston, “What Matter(s) in Ontology: Alain Badiou, The Hebb-Event, and Materialism Split From Within” in *Angelaki: The Journal of the Theoretical Humanities*, Vol. 13, No. 1 (April 2008), 27–49.
23. Ibid.
24. Badiou, quoted in Johnston, *ibid.*
25. Ibid.
26. Johnston, “Phantom of Consistency: Alain Badiou and Kantian Transcendental Idealism” in *Continental Philosophy Review*, Vol. 41, No. 3 (2008), 345–366.
27. Ibid.
28. Ibid.
29. Badiou, *Logics of Worlds*, 114.
30. Johnston, “Phantom of Consistency,” 364.
31. Badiou, *Logics of Worlds*, 117.
32. Johnston, “Phantom of Consistency,” 363.
33. Badiou, *Logics of Worlds*, 579, my emphasis.
34. Johnston, “Phantom of Consistency,” 364.
35. See chapter three.
36. See for instance, Wright, *Badiou in Jamaica* (Victoria: Re.press, 2013), 19–20, Bosteels’ Introduction to the English translation of Badiou’s *Theory of the Subject*, vii–ix, and Bosteels, *Badiou and Politics* (Durham: Duke University Press, 2011), 1–3.
37. Bosteels, *Badiou and Politics*, 2.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Althusser, Louis. *For Marx*. Translated by Ben Brewster. New York and London: Verso, 2005.
- Badiou, Alain. *Logics of Worlds*. Translated by Alberto Toscano. New York and London: Continuum, 2009a.
- . *Theory of the Subject*. Translated by Bruno Bosteels. New York and London: Continuum, 2009b.
- and Bruno Bosteels. “Can Change Be Thought?: An Interview with Alain Badiou” in *Alain Badiou: Philosophy and its Conditions*. Edited by Gabriel Reira. New York: SUNY Press, 2005. 237–262.
- and Elisabeth Roudinesco. *Jacques Lacan Past and Present: A Dialogue*. Translated by Jason E. Smith. New York: Columbia, 2014.
- Bosteels, Bruno. *Badiou and Politics*. Durham: Duke University Press, 2011.
- Johnston, Adrian. “Phantom of Consistency: Alain Badiou and Kantian Transcendental Idealism” in *Continental Philosophy Review*. Vol. 41 No. 3 (2008a). 345–366.
- . “What Matter(s) in Ontology: Alain Badiou, the Hebb-Event, and Materialism Split from Within” in *Angelaki: The Journal of the Theoretical Humanities*. Vol. 13, No. 1 (April 2008b). 27–49.

Osborne, Peter. "Neo-Classic: Alain Badiou's *Being and Event*" in *Radical Philosophy: A Journal of Socialist and Feminist Philosophy*. Vol. 142 (March–April 2007). 19–29.

Power, Nina. "The Truth of Humanity: The Collective Political Subject in Sartre and Badiou" in *Pli: The Warwick Journal of Philosophy*. Vol. 20 (2009). 1–27.

Sartre, Jean-Paul. *The Critique of Dialectical Reason: Volume 1*. Translated by Alan Sheridan-Smith. New York and London: Verso, 2004.

Wright, Colin. *Badiou in Jamaica*. Victoria: Re.press, 2013.

5 Žižek and the Materialism of the Immaterial, or Why Hegel Is Not an Idealist

Žižek, in a recent interview, regarding his materialism, claims:

... There is a fundamental difference between the assertion that ‘everything is matter’ . . . and the assertion ‘there is nothing which is not matter’ (which with its other side, ‘not all is matter,’ opens up the space for the account of immaterial phenomena). What this means is that a truly radical materialism is by definition non-reductionist: far from claiming that ‘everything is matter’, it confers upon the ‘immaterial’ phenomena a specific positive non-being.¹

This chapter begins the discussion of Žižek’s relation to (and revision of) Althusser by attempting to clarify Žižek’s ‘non-reductionist’ materialism as he describes it above. I will do this by locating Žižek’s materialism in his de-progressified, Lacanian reading of Hegel’s thought in which Hegel becomes the primary representative of a properly—non-reductive—materialist paradigm. Chapter 6 will then assess the similarities and differences between Žižek’s view and Badiou’s, in part by continuing the description that begins here of Žižek’s revision of Hegel via Lacan (and further connecting these through his reading of Marx); arguing ultimately, that Žižek’s materialism overcomes the remaining idealism that continues to infect Badiou’s thought.

I.

As is well known, in the *Phenomenology of Spirit*, Hegel sees the negative moment in the dialectical process of Consciousness’s coming to awareness of itself and its world as crucially important. It is the point where mediation occurs and where what is properly “true” about the previous moment comes into view. It is in the space of such negativity that we begin to discern that which before was not mediated (immediate, and not fully understood), in its fully expressed actuality, as the moment that is what it is *through the exclusion* of that which it negates. In the mode of the immediate (at any given step in the process), one is under the illusion of having a kind of complete understanding, believing that knowledge of one’s self and one’s world is complete,

closed, and whole. In the space of the negative moment, this understanding, the perceived whole—and its explanations—become inadequate and fall apart. What appeared to be complete, whole, and universal turns out not to apply, there is a lack—an inherent ‘not-All’ in one’s knowledge—that has been covered over by the perceived totality which becomes, in the space of the negative moment, laid bare in its incompleteness. This calls into question, for the knower, the previously experienced universality of knowledge. In order to better grasp this point we can look briefly at how this process unfolds in the opening sections of “Sense Certainty” in Hegel’s *Phenomenology*.

On Hegel’s account, consciousness’s first attempts to understand its world are founded in taking that which comes to it through the senses for what is true. According to Hegel, what consciousness finds is that “the thing,” namely, the object (or set of objects) that it receives through its senses, “is.”² This is to say that the object of knowledge has a kind of brute, inert existence and that “it is merely because it is.”³ The multiplicity of things that are found in the world, appear to consciousness at this stage as necessarily fixed, determined, and differentiated in certain ways. Thus, what is true for consciousness at this stage is “this” thing, in its brute, physical existence, that is “here,” displayed in front of consciousness “now.” What is further revealed to consciousness in this moment is that the structure of the thing (the “This”) is both “Now” and “Here” which then become the new determinations (or concepts) that need to be understood.⁴

We could ask—as Hegel did—about the “Now” (the question is: what is the “Now?”) and say, for instance that the “Now is night” (this thing, that is here now, is night) but as we will quickly notice, that definition is only a fleeting one for it is the case that at some point the ‘Now’ will not be night but it will be day.⁵ What this realization brings with it is a further determination and differentiation of the “now.” This is also—as is well known—Hegel’s description of how consciousness comes to discover universal concepts like ‘This,’ ‘Now,’ and ‘Here’ out of the particulars to which they are initially applied in consciousness’ everyday dealings with the world. These universal concepts arise *in* and come to be known as a result of the experience of them as non-universal, fleeting, and contingent. The concept is brought to light in the *negation* of its particular (and contingent) determinations. In the negation of particular ‘nows’ we come to understand the concept of “Now” itself, but this concept is not strictly identical with any of its particular instantiations, it is rather ‘not’ any one of them. What is also revealed in this is the primacy of the negative moment as Hegel shows us:

The Now that is night is preserved, i.e., it is treated as what it professes to be, as something that is; but it proves itself to be on the contrary, something that is *not*. The Now does indeed preserve itself, but as something that is not night; equally it preserves itself in the face of the day that it now is, as something that is also not Day, in other words, as a *negative* in general.⁶

What was first posited by the moment of sense certainty as the ‘Now’ has become distinguished from its particulars, as it is not properly any one of them but rather a universal, which is at the same time all of its particular moments *and* none of them. This is, as we have seen, discovered through the negation of attempting to identify the universal “Now” with one of its particular instantiations, but this knowledge only comes *after* or as a *result* of a distancing of the starting point in which the universal is not universal but rather particular and determined, but that which is particular and determined is perceived to be universal.

Hegel conceives of knowledge as always being mediated by the negative moment. As we have seen in the example of consciousness’s coming to understand the concept of “Now,” it first took what was immediately given as the truth of the “Now” (now is night) but then found that the negation of that idea (that the “Now” was not only to be identified with ‘night’ but with ‘day’ as well) exhibited the real “truth” of the first understanding of the term, namely that that this understanding was inadequate, that it did not offer a completed definition—because now the “Now” is day, but this also becomes mediated in the recognition that the universal “Now” cannot be strictly identified with either of these particular instantiations of it, and is in fact radically different then, and not determined by, the particularity with which these instantiations appear.

It is only in the negative moment, as that moment in which we come to see what is left out by our current knowledge of things, that we come to see what is universal and hence “True” about the nature of our current mode of knowing (that it is always inadequate, that it always leaves something out, that it is what it is based on this exclusion). Furthermore, consciousness itself is what it is at any given moment as a product of such inadequacies—its own determinations are only what they are as a *result* of a kind of foundational exclusion that only shows itself *in existence* in the moment of negation.

We should briefly recall that for Hegel, like Kant before him, the “objective” world in which we live is the product of the interaction between consciousness (as that which organizes, imposes meaning, and “knows”) and what is affected by it. Recall the Kantian idea of consciousness as a ‘receptive spontaneity’; consciousness receives information and then spontaneously organizes it (according to the structures it imposes on this information) so that it can be understood, or ‘known.’ It is not, on Kant’s accounting of things, the objects of experience that modify our consciousness but rather our consciousness that modifies the objects of experience so that they can be comprehended.⁷ Hegel wishes to accept a portion of the Kantian claim. He does think, along with Kant, that the subjective conditions of experience and knowledge cannot be changed by objects and that objects are in fact determined by consciousness and are grounded in such determinations. In commenting on this in the *Science of Logic*, Hegel points out, apropos the common sense idea that when one cognizes the world one somehow “has”

notions, concepts, or ideas of one's objects, that though this way of describing cognition is "true" with regard to "determinant notions" (particulars): "the *I* is the pure Notion itself, which as Notion, has come into existence."⁸ For Hegel, the Kantian claim about the work of consciousness on the world becomes the claim that notions are not merely 'had' by consciousness, but rather, consciousness and its notions are one and the same (consciousness *is* its notion and the notion *is* consciousness). Consciousness, or we could also say, subjectivity, is the material existence of the notion: it is the lived instantiation of that notion or set of notions (here to be understood as the set of concepts/ideas through which one cognizes the world). There is, in this way, a kind of one-to-one correspondence between the subject (consciousness) and the world (that which is perceived by consciousness). Hegel continues:

This constitutes the nature of the *I* as well as the Notion; neither the one nor the other can be truly comprehended unless the two indicated moments are grasped at the same time both in their abstraction and their perfect unity. When one speaks in the ordinary way of the *understanding possessed by the I*, one understands thereby a *faculty* or *property* which stands in the same relation to the *I* as the property of a thing does to the thing itself, that is, to an indeterminate substrate that is not the genuine ground and the determinant of its property. According to this conception *I possess* notions and *the Notion* in the same way as I also possess a coat, complexion, and other external properties. Now Kant went beyond this external relation of the understanding, as the faculty of notions and of *the Notion* itself, to the *I*. It is one of the profoundest and truest insights to be found in the *Critique of Pure Reason* that the unity which constitutes the nature of the Notion is recognized as the original *Synthetic* unity of *apperception*, as the unity of the 'I think,' or of self-consciousness.⁹

Though it is the case, as we have seen, that Hegel agrees, in part, with the Kantian arguments here, he wants to argue that the *subjective conditions of experience do in fact change, even though they are not affected by the object*. They change historically, as people and cultures change; and so, individual cognition is related to communal cognition which itself shifts and changes throughout history. Any given consciousness (or material instantiation of a particular, historically existing 'notion') is the subjective representation of a particular historical-communal moment in the development of humanity and the human world.

There is, in this way, as Hegel says in the *Introduction to The Philosophy of History*, 'Reason in history' in two senses. First, insofar as he takes the Kantian claims to be true—because reason is involved in the creation of objects as they are cognized by humans, and insofar as humans themselves are temporal beings, human history is infused with reason's participation in the construction of objects. As he points out, "Reason is the *substance*

[of our historic world] in the sense that it is that whereby and wherein all reality has its being and subsistence.”¹⁰ And second, at the same time that Hegel takes the Kantian points described above to be true, he also wants—as already noted—to say that Reason and History are connected insofar as Reason bears the mark of the history in which it comes to be what it is. So the claim that there is “Reason in history” is also meant to signal Hegel’s innovation over and above Kant: the claim to the historically developmental nature of Reason, and also, the historical construction, transformation, and indexing of the Kantian transcendental subjective conditions themselves.

Hegel goes on, then, to re-conceive of the ground of both the objective world and the individual self as being found in the struggle for recognition and the movement from individual desire to a communally agreed upon set of “truths” that form and shape our experiences of our world and our understanding of ourselves. Knowledge—and the knower—is determined by our pragmatic concerns and our active dealings with one another in the community. What is true is, in fact, determined by self-consciousness but is so in reference to what self-consciousness is concerned with, and this is primarily determined by the concerns of the historically located community. Thus, individual self-consciousness is conditioned by the social and objects in the world are conditioned by self-consciousness’s desire, or lack of desire, for them. However, as should be clear, this also is not merely the desire of a single individuated self-consciousness, but that of a historical community. That is, individuated desires are the built out of the larger set of desires that are communally grounded (so, in this way, communality precedes the individual). It is Hegel’s description of self-consciousness as founded in the struggle for recognition that gives us a conception of identity in which identities are *determined* and understood in relation to a historically contingent and changing communal consciousness—Spirit or *Geist* in Hegel’s terminology—of what is to be desired.

To be sure, individual consciousness still exists, but it is grounded in a pre-existent communal consciousness that is already meaning-laden and unfolds according to a certain historical-communal understanding of what is valued and meaningful. It is out of the already meaning-laden world that the individual consciousness arises and thus that world reflects back to the individual those things that make up her self-understanding. In this way, the self-conscious subject always begins as, or finds itself determined and differentiated by, its particular historical moment and the notion(s) that exist for it at that given time. The crucial aspect of this to see is that this determinism is historical; the identity of individual self-consciousness is the product of the communal modes of knowing (in the same way that knowledge itself is). Žižek, in commenting on this, notes that:

Hegel of course learned the lesson of Kant’s transcendental idealism (there is no reality prior to a subject’s positing activity); however, he refused to elevate the subject into a neutral-universal agent who directly

constitutes reality. To put it in Kantian terms: while he admitted there is no reality without the subject, Hegel insisted that *subjectivity is inherently pathological* (biased, limited to a distorting, unbalanced perspective of the whole).¹¹

Žižek's point, as we have already begun to see, is that the Hegelian subject both organizes its world—in a Kantian sense—and is also organized by its world insofar as its own organizing capacities are constructed and constrained by the existing community as it is at a given historical moment. That is, in order for *any* world to show up, it must be organized by a conscious subject; the reality that such a subject posits, however, is always limited (biased, distorted) by the context within which she is found. There is then (at least initially) no non-pathological subject.

If all subjects are pathological in this sense, then all are contingently constructed in their subjecthood. Echoing the Althusserian conception, for Žižek's Hegel, subjectivity (first) is a product of the various differences, institutions, practices, traditions, modes of knowledge, and ideologies that exist at a given time. So subjectivity itself (and all of its differences) begins as the contingent, and ideologically limited, product of history. As such, it serves to ground, (re)produce, and sustain those differences. This ground, however, is so only on the condition that it excludes that which it negates (i.e., universality itself in the form of the negative moment, or knowledge of the 'not-All' of knowledge).

In some versions of the Hegelian story, the dialectic—and thus history itself—comes to an end in "Absolute Knowing" where the subject and its object coincide completely in higher level which takes both out of the realm of the historical (finite) existence and into the ahistorical (infinite); at this moment, there truly is no longer anything left out in knowledge and existence and, in turn, there is no longer any negativity but rather an infinite "whole."¹² This, however, is *not* Žižek's version of the story. Žižek explains the moment of "Absolute Knowing" not as a grasping of the Absolute in which we gain a way out of the historical process through an understanding that becomes infinite and thus ends negation, but rather ". . . we fail to grasp the Absolute precisely insofar as we continue to presuppose that, above and beyond the domain of our finite reflected reasoning, there is an Absolute to be grasped."¹³ It is *within* the confines of our finite reasoning that we come to know the Absolute Truth, which is simply that "there is no Absolute *beyond* or *above* the reflexive oppositions and contradictions of the Finite—the Absolute is *nothing but* the movement of self-sublation of these finite determinations."¹⁴

More recently, Žižek has put the point this way:

. . . Adopting the stance of "Absolute Knowing," the subject does not ask if the content (some particular object of inquiry) meets some a priori standard (of truth, goodness, beauty); it lets the content measure

itself, by its own immanent standards, and thus self-authorizes itself. The stance of Absolute Knowing thus fully coincides with thorough (absolute) historicism: there is no transcendental “big Other,” there are no criteria that we can apply to historical phenomena themselves.¹⁵

This is the source of Žižek’s materialist reading of Hegel. For Žižek’s Hegel there is no outside: we are always already included—even as subjects—in the world that we construct in our modes of coming to know it. Furthermore, this world is as it is *on the condition of* the modes of understanding that are employed by us, which are not constructed *ex nihilo* but rather are themselves founded by individuals and communities in history—that is, they are the results of the historical, embodied activity of humans. These modes themselves become what they are by being embodied, in both individuals and communities, and the material practices in which they engage. Thus, what is “Absolute” is precisely the historicity of systems of knowing (founded on the dialectic of negation and mediation), the contingent and historical world that these create (and, reflexively, that is created by these modes of knowing), and the contingent, differentiated, and limited subjects that are born out of this. The Hegelian Absolute is nothing other than this process itself, and “Absolute Knowing” is nothing more than the awareness of this fact:

“Absolute Knowing” is nothing more than the final recognition of a limitation which is ‘absolute’ in the sense that it is not determinate or particular, not a relative “limit” or obstacle to our knowledge that we can clearly see and locate as such. It is invisible “as such” because it is the limitation of the entire field as such—that closure of the field which, from within the field itself (and we are always by definition within it, because in a way this field “is” ourselves) cannot but appear as its opposite, as the very openness of the field.¹⁶

To have ‘Absolute Knowledge’ is, then, to understand that any cognition of the world is partial and limited, and importantly, to recognize the partial and limited nature of one’s own consciousness. This is to say that having ‘Absolute Knowledge’ is recognizing both that there are *particular* historically conditioned, contingent, limited, and delimited forms of knowing attended by certain forms of consciousness (or subjectivities)—such as those described by Hegel in the *Phenomenology*—whose limits can be overcome in the next dialectical moment, and that *all forms* of knowing are universally limited: so, limitation and partiality is the universal, ‘Absolute,’ or transcendental condition of all forms of consciousness as such. This cannot be overcome: “the dialectical buck stops here: the subject can no longer play the game of the ‘experience of consciousness’ comparing the For-us with the In-itself and thereby subverting both of them, since there is no longer any shape of the In-itself available as a measure of the truth For-us.”¹⁷ What one

gains in the moment of Absolute knowing, is the knowledge that the distinction between the For-us and the In-itself is *internal* to subjectivity:

Absolute knowing thus takes the impossibility of a meta-language to the extreme. In our ordinary experience, we rely on the distinction between For-us and In-itself . . . We distinguish secondary properties of things (which exist only for us, like color and taste) from their primary properties (shape and so on) which characterize things as they are in themselves; at the end of this road is the pure mathematical formalism of quantum physics as the only (totally non-intuitive) In-itself accessible to us. This final result, however, simultaneously renders visible the paradox . . . What we posit as the “In-itself” of things is the product of centuries-long labor of scientific research. In short, a lot of subjective activity (of experimentation, creation of new concepts, etc.) is needed to arrive at what is “objective.”¹⁸

Recall here the Bachelardian claims, discussed in chapter two, regarding how it is that the scientific ‘object’ is constructed by the material processes that are used in its investigation (the microscope and so forth). As Žižek argues here, to understand this is to understand the central role the subject plays in the construction of the distinction itself, or as he puts it, “the two aspects, the In-itself and the For-Itself, thus reveal themselves to be dialectically mediated” by the subject.¹⁹ Subjectivity then, and its cognitive capacities, stand(s) for the universal failure of the existence of a Whole that stands outside of, or pre-exists, the historically contingent and partial process.

Commenting further on the place of contingency in Hegel, Žižek argues that what the standard views of Hegel’s system—in which there is no room for contingency and all is determined by a necessary logical, historical, and processional development of a pre-existent whole in the process of moving from implicit to explicit—miss is that:

The Hegelian dialectical process is not such a ‘saturated’ self-contained necessary Whole, but the open-contingent process through which the *Whole forms itself*. In other words [the standard view] confuses being with becoming: it perceives as a fixed order of being (the network of categories) what is for Hegel the process of becoming which *retroactively*, engenders its necessity.²⁰

The necessity—if there is any—only comes *after the fact* in a retrospective reconstruction of the path that consciousness has taken. This does not mean that such a necessity was present from the beginning, nor does it mean that what we perceive as necessary is anything more than a necessity that forms out of a contingent historical process. In other words, for Hegel, what is primary in the necessity/contingency relation is contingency:

If the encompassing unity of necessity and contingency is necessity, then the necessity (gradually discovered by our cognition as the underlying

Notion of the phenomenal contingent multiplicity) had to be there all the time, waiting to be discovered by our cognition—in short, in this case, Hegel’s central idea that our way towards truth is part of the truth itself, is cancelled and we regress to the standard metaphysical notion of Truth as substantial In-itself, independent of a subject’s approach to it.²¹

I will return to this in a moment. At this point, it will be useful to take a detour through Žižek’s deployment of some parts of Lacan’s work in his appropriation of Hegel in order to shed light on the move that is made here.

II.

What I wish to focus on, initially anyway, are two key ingredients of Lacan’s thought, namely the ‘Symbolic’ as that which structures and organizes, and the ‘Real’ to be read here, following Žižek’s reading of Lacan, as that which is the symptom of the Symbolic in that it is both inherent to, and generated by, the symbolic but also that which acts to disrupt its continuity and universality. Seen in this way, the “real” can be viewed as the properly negative moment of the symbolic (further explanation below).

For Lacan, like Hegel, we come to understand the world and ourselves through a kind of interaction in which both—ourselves and the world—become organized, ordered, and meaning-laden. One of the ways that we can understand this is through Lacan’s analysis of the foundational nature of language. Language functions as the primary mode through which this ordering happens. Here Lacan writes, “through the word . . . there is born the world of meaning of a particular language in which the world of things will come to be arranged.”²²

The arranging of the world through language immediately takes on a foundational tone as Lacan goes on to claim that it is not merely through language that the world gets organized but rather it is “the world of words that *create* the world of things,” and this means that the world *is* what it is in large part, as the product of language.²³ As Lacan argues, the structures of language and the meanings that these structures create *impose* organization not only on the world, but on humans as well and this process happens in an altogether unconscious fashion. We do not recognize this imposition of structure as such because it is inscribed in, and the foundation of, our very conscious awareness of both ourselves and the world in which we find ourselves. We only come to consciousness *within* the world of meanings that exist as the result of language; and language and meaning is the result of an ongoing material and historical process. Thus, it is language and its historically located structures and meanings that are constitutive of our very experience (and our very world).

This process is, according to Lacan, the process that Freud is metaphorically describing when he discusses the foundational nature of the Taboo against incest in his *Totem and Taboo*. Here Lacan writes, “the primordial

Law [prohibition of incest] is therefore that which, in regulating marriage ties, superimposes the kingdom of culture on that of a nature abandoned to the law of mating . . . This law then, is revealed clearly enough as identical with an order of language."²⁴ It is with language, in its unconscious imposition of order on both the world and individuals, through its creation of the world of things, that humans are, to speak metaphorically, raised out of an animal-like existence in which the world exhibits itself as unorganized and capricious and we merely act on instincts (as in the case of killing the father out the desire for the mother in Freud's story). This is because the order of language imposes an order on this instinct and caprice such that it becomes regulated.

To be sure, this story, for Lacan, is not an attempt at any sort of empirically valid explanation of the pre-history of humanity. It is an explanatory myth. One that, while offering a plausible understanding of what humanity might be like outside of the ordering imposition of language, is nonetheless a myth as Rosalind Coward and John Ellis point out: "this myth can only ever be mythical precisely because any knowledge one has of the processes pre-existing language and the unconscious are known only through language with its symbolic relations."²⁵ This should not, however, lessen the force of the point of myth itself, the goal here is demonstrate the power of language and meaning in its ordering capacities. Speaking non-mythically, it is, according to Lacan, language which first orders and constitutes both consciousness itself (as consciousness)—and the multiple and different identities that particular consciousness's take on—and allows for the differentiation and categorization of consciousness's objects. Lacan continues:

Symbols [words, languages, grammars] in fact envelop the life of man in a network so total that they join together, before he comes into the world, those who are going to engender him by "flesh and blood"; so total that they bring to his birth, along with the gift of the stars, if not the gifts of the fairies, the shape of his destiny.²⁶

This can—and should—be read in connection with the point that Hegel makes about the nature of knowledge being determined by the community. It is within the order, institutions, and the meanings that are present in a socio-historical situation that any given subject comes to self-awareness and awareness of her world as ordered, categorized, and differentiated in a particular way. These meanings are imposed on the subject before she has the ability to question or resist them and as such they present themselves as necessary categories within which she comes to think both herself and her world. Thus, this awareness, while productive of both the subject and the object, is always conditioned by this pre-existing social and historical situation. Nevertheless, all of this is only possible in the mode of the symbolic, through the positing of a subject who, in the use of linguistic utterances to refer, is herself established as a particular kind of subject within a communal

context in which those linguistic utterances refer to something that is recognizable by others in that community.

Apropos Lacan's example referred to in the quote above, of the ways in which language and meaning come to structure one's existence even prior to one's birth, we can think of the particular type of meaning-ladenness that exists in our times of the concept of 'baby' and the network of meanings and significations that are built up around, and connected to, such a term. None of these meanings are ahistorical: they shift and change as cultures shift and change, but no matter their particular content, they are the network of meanings and values that are imposed on one even prior to one's birth. Regarding 'our' conception of this, as any contemporary—one should, I guess qualify this 'any' with other historico-social markers such as 'Western'—parent who has such thoughts knows, it is virtually impossible, for instance, to find much in the way of non-gendered infant products. From clothing to diapers, to cribs and room decorations, almost everything is marked by the cultural meanings that surround our current (again, local) conjuncture's understanding of what it is to be male or what it is to be female. Further, parents themselves often now find out the sex of their babies very early on in a pregnancy, and this knowledge also marks the way that parents come to think of—and talk to and treat—their baby even as it exists in the womb; so that when and if it does arrive, there is always-already a set of expectations for characteristics waiting for the child's arrival into which he or she will be fit. Further still, the entire set of meanings, values, and beliefs that surround the advent of a pregnancy is cultural and historical (and also in many ways economic), and this complex network of significations determines both the experience of the pregnancy/birth/child-parent relation for *both* the parent-to-be and the child from the time that it is conceived.

Thus, as Lacan argues, I become a subject when I enter into the network of the symbolic; this begins even before I start to learn the language of my community and come to be able to understand myself in relation to it. The symbolic calls me into existence in a particular way through its structures, which are imposed on me whenever I respond to the linguistic call—again, we return to the Althusserian theme of interpellation—of others in my community who use these structures to refer to me and who, themselves, are also interpellated by the linguistic structures and meanings in which they find themselves.

The call is what in Lacanian terms structures and is structured by the symbolic. To again weave this together with the Althusserian account of subject formation, I become a unified being in my relation to the 'Other' of the symbolic (the totality of which Lacan refers to as the big Other), which calls on me to perform certain actions that interpellate (or draw me together) as its subject.²⁷ When my students address me as a teacher, it is to their call that I am subordinated. Here I am 'subjectivized' as a teacher, and along with that, come all of the trappings of the position of authority. The power that I seem to hold in such a position is not something which I do in fact

hold, rather I am held by it, that is to say, I only 'have' such power in virtue of the social recognition that I am accorded, and it is this recognition that constructs my very subjectivity as one who has such power. In the same way, when I am called out to by someone else who holds a position of power, my boss or supervisor, for example, not only does my subjective position become cemented, but so does that individual's (and all of the power that comes along with such a position in the symbolic, and for me, all the lack of power that comes along with my recognition of the call of power). It is this interpellative mechanism that, writ large, structures one's world and the meanings that are possible for one by designating the symbolic coordinates of her understanding of both herself and her world.

However, as we should be able to see, even though language (and the symbolic order) and its processes of differentiation and meaning giving, appear as totalizing (in the same way that the coordinated desires of a community and the structures that are built from this, attempt to totally determine what is meaningful for Hegel), the ordering/structuring move itself generates its own obstruction, its symptom, as that which signifies its failure to totalize. To continue with linguistic examples, Lacan describes an opposition between speech and language and reminds us of some conditions under which language (as the imposed order/ordering act) fails in its attempted totalizing structuring. One of these is found in what are taken by the symbolic structures of a given language to be incomprehensible utterances (speech) of the psychotic, where "speech has given up trying to make itself recognized."²⁸

Speech, then, is not exhaustively structured by language. Speech can be unstructured and it also can point to something that is excluded by the structures of any given linguistic system (more on this below). It is precisely these incomprehensible utterances, which form the inherent borders of that system itself, which exhibit its inability to totalize. Nevertheless this 'exclusion' is also the condition upon which a given language comes to signify, so it is also a part of it. In Žižek's terms, it is "the part which, although inherent to the existing universal order, has no 'proper place' within it."²⁹ This is how Žižek understands the Lacanian notion of the Real: as that which is both generated by the symbolic, and that which forms its immanent limitation or, as Žižek puts it, "The Real is not the transcendent substantial reality which from outside disturbs the Symbolic balance, but the immanent obstacle, stumbling block, of the order itself."³⁰

The Real is, in this way, what is repressed or foreclosed on by the structure and apparent totalization of a system of meaning and language. Because, as we have seen, according to Lacan, this system is itself never closed, never fully totalizing, the real shows up—in those utterances that are taken to be incomprehensible, or those 'slips' of the tongue which signify something more or different than they are meant to—reveals itself within the system as its 'symptom.' Returning to the discussion of the (Hegelian) relation between necessity and contingency from section one of this chapter, though

the return of the Real (or the repressed) is itself always necessary (as systems are never closed and always harbor that which acts to disrupt them):

. . . This necessity itself does not pre-exist the contingent multitude of appearances as their ground—it itself emerges out of contingency, as contingency elevated into the necessity of a universal concept . . . An inner necessity can only articulate itself through the contingency of a symptom, and vice versa: this necessity (say the constant urge of a repressed desire) comes to be only through this articulation. Here also the necessity does not simply pre-exist contingency: When Lacan says that repression and the return of the repressed (in symptomal formations) are the front and the back of one and the same process, the implication is precisely that the necessity (of the repressed content) hinges on the contingency (of its articulation in symptoms).³¹

This is the further foundation of Žižek's understanding of the negative moment in the Hegelian dialectic. That which forms the negative moment of any given historical mode of understanding is identified by Žižek with the Lacanian Real, and this is, as described above, nothing other than the symptom of that given moment's perceived universality, which when revealed, shows the lack of closure of the symbolic and hence its nature as 'not-All' there is.

Returning now to the crux of the Hegelian/Lacanian brand of materialism Žižek endorses, I want to begin to address the possibility of a lingering worry (one which I will return to again in the following chapter via Marx). Given all the talk of the determination of the subject and the world by the symbolic, or language and meaning (Lacan), or subjective consciousness and its modes of knowing/concepts (Hegel), one might be tempted to argue that there is nothing of a materialism here, or if there is, it is one this still infected with what can only be described as a kind of linguistic/conceptual idealism in which the matter is determined by a meaning that floats above matter itself and exists only in the minds of those who cognize it. The answer to this is to be found in part in Lacan himself and also (by extension) in Žižek's claims that his materialism is 'non-reductive.'

III.

First, recall the structure of the Hegelian-Lacanian claims laid out above: the awareness of the individual (both in regard to herself and her world) is determined by the network of linguistic meanings within which she first finds herself. It is this network of meanings and symbols that construct her own awareness. Further, this network itself is not static (or synchronically structured to return to the language of structuralism); it is historical and the result of the contingent development of communal practices and language usage. This

latter point—the contingent nature of linguistic structure—is demonstrated by the existence of the Lacanian ‘Real’—or the Hegelian negative moment—that is defined as the symptomatic exception/excess that remains in the face of the seeming totality of meaning/knowledge, and which, when it becomes visible, shows us this ‘not-All.’ Tom Eyers demonstrates this point quite nicely in relation to Lacan in his explanation of the importance of what he calls the distinction between the ‘signifier-in-relation’ and the ‘signifier-in-isolation.’³²

As Eyers explains this distinction, the signifier-in-relation is the signifier as it exists within a given network of historically located meanings; here it is defined by these relations insofar as it comes to have meaning only within the system of the symbolic. The other concept, “the signifier-in-isolation designates the signifier as Real, isolated in its material element away from the networks of relation that render it conducive to (and of) meaning.”³³ We should think here, again, of the Lacanian distinction explored earlier between language and speech. Unstructured speech is akin to the signifier-in-isolation that in language becomes the signifier-in-relation. It is this material signifier-in-isolation that represents the material basis of symbolization as such: as Eyers points out, it symbolizes ‘nothing’ in its isolated state, but it is that out of which symbolic networks are built and at the same time that which forms the limit of such networks:

The complex relation between meaning and unmeaning, between the support and the threat that the signifier-in-isolation induces, marks Lacan’s Materialism. When Language is conceived in these terms, it should be understood less as an extra-material ‘representation’ of matter and more the very ‘thing’ of human experience itself . . . As a ‘thing’ it embodies the characteristics we might normally associate with physical matter: an insistent permanence, the ability to undergird human projects, including those involving human communication . . . and crucially, the potential to disrupt such activities in its stubborn insistence.³⁴

Further, as already pointed out above, the materialism inherent to the Symbolic in Lacan can be understood via the recognition that as individuals we are not (initially) in control of the meaning-giving function of the linguistic utterances that we use—in fact we are, as we have seen, controlled by the language we use and inserted into it as we come to conscious awareness—and, moreover, these meanings themselves are embedded in the existence of the historico-social community as it is at a given time. There is, then, for Lacan (as for Žižek’s Lacanian Hegel), not a strict division between the material (history/community) and ideal (linguistic meaning). It is the negative moment found in the Real of the signifier-in-isolation with its rendering visible the incomplete nature of the symbolic, that shows us this. Here again is Eyers:

By rooting our understanding of the Real within the logic of the signifier we may begin to recognize the materiality of the immaterial, and the

stubborn opacity of the material itself. Lacan's claim that it is through the signifier that this materiality is revealed to us should not be taken as a concession to any standard brand of anti-realism or hyper-textualism; to the contrary, Lacan's aim is to render superfluous any neat separation of the ideal from the material, from the representative to that to which it ostensibly refers.³⁵

Žižek's Hegelian materialism—Eyers' comments elsewhere in the same essay that Žižek's position is somehow different than Lacan's notwithstanding—is precisely an extension of this project of making problematic any simple separation of the ideal from the material.³⁶

We can see this most fully if we now—with Lacan in view—turn back to Žižek's reading of Hegel and the connection between the Lacanian conception of the symbolic as defined by language and meaning, and the Hegelian communal subject. We are now, I think, in a position to understand the point that Žižek makes—and its connection to the description of it that we saw at the beginning of this chapter—when he renders his materialist position in this way in the opening pages of *The Parallax View*:

Materialism is not the direct assertion of my inclusion in objective reality (such an assertion presupposes that my position of enunciation is that of an external observer who can grasp the whole of reality); rather, it resides in the reflexive twist by means of which I am included in the picture constituted by me—it is this reflexive short circuit, this necessary redoubling of myself as standing both outside and inside my picture that bears witness to my 'material existence.' Materialism means that the reality I see is never "whole"—not because a large part of it eludes me, but because it contains a stain, a blind spot, which indicates my inclusion in it.³⁷

The 'redoubling of myself' that Žižek refers to here is the redoubling that occurs in my awareness of myself (and my world) as built for me out of the material of the historico-communally grounded symbolic order that exists for me (that is, my *inclusion* as a being that is itself constructed by those symbols I use to refer) *and at the same time* my awareness of (in a properly materialist awareness anyway) the fact that my awareness of this is itself partial and limited. Adrian Johnston puts this point in this way:

. . . What appears as external reflection (i.e., the gaze of the subject on substance) is not confined to an epistemological field separated off from the reflected-upon reality of being. Rather than being external, this reflection is inscribed in the reality of being upon which it reflects as an internal inflection, an immanent folding-back of substance on itself; the gaze of the subject upon substance is substance-as-not-all gazing upon itself.³⁸

In this way, Žižek's non-reductive materialism is not a rejection of the ideal, or a relegating of it to another realm, but rather an embracing of the existence—and determining power—of the ideal *qua* subjectivity in a quasi-Kantian sense, but with a Lacanian-Hegelian twist in which the ideal itself is located as emerging *in*, and out of, the historico-communal material. As such, subjectivity is itself (even in its ideality), materially generated, universally always-already partial, limited, and not-All there is.

If this is correct, if the finite, pathological, and limited ideal—even though it is that through which reality is constituted for us—emerges itself out of the material, defined here as the symbolic-communal order, if the subject is, in Hegelian fashion, simultaneously substance, the question is then *how* does such a split, such a redoubling emerge? As Žižek himself asks the question in *The Parallax View*, “how, from within the flat order of positive being, [does] the very gap between thought and being, the negativity of being, emerge?”³⁹

In a text co-written with Markus Gabriel, Žižek looks to Hegel's conception of ‘habit’ as our naturally extant ‘second nature’ for the foundation of how this materially generated emergent gap is produced:

... It is not that the human animal breaks with nature through a creative explosion of Spirit, which then gets habituated, alienated, turned into mindless habit: the reduplication of nature in ‘second nature’ is primordial, that is, it is only this reduplication that opens up the space for spiritual creativity.⁴⁰

The argument here goes as follows (echoing much of what we have said already): the distinction between first nature and second nature is, for the human, *not really a distinction*—we are beings whose first nature is to be beings who have a second nature. This second nature—signified here as a collection of historically contingent and changing ‘habits’ which are built out of what is, at a given time, communally acceptable and founded—is what organizes and constructs subjectivity's appearance, that is, subjectivity is the internalization of that which is originally external and communal.

These subjective habits are truly habits insofar as they are experienced by the individual subject not as contingent chosen activities, but rather as the necessary features of existence. One such set of habits is (here is the importance of the Lacanian reflections on language given above) linguistic habits, in which we become habituated to hear *meaning* (which, as we have already noted, is itself historically indexed) rather than the brute natural sounds of the utterances themselves as Žižek notes:

When I hear a word, not only do I immediately abstract from its sound and ‘see through it’ to its meaning (recall the weird experience of becoming aware of the non-transparent vocal stuff of a word- it appears as intrusive and obscene . . .), but I have to do it if I am to experience meaning.⁴¹

My very experience of hearing is conditioned (most of the time anyway) by the second natural habit of hearing meaning rather than brute sound. This is true of many other habits that I pick up in existence. For instance, the habitual way one greets someone in a particular culture—say, in the United States—the handshake is experienced by one who is properly habituated, not as the brute experience of the flexing of the muscles in the arm as it is extended and the clasping of the hand around the other hand, but as a symbolic gesture, detached from the material action that embodies it. In this way, both in the linguistic example and the example of the greeting, through habituation to and in historico-cultural practices (linguistic and otherwise), the actions themselves are ‘freed’ from their material foundations and this reduplicated at a second level (which becomes the most important level). Again referencing Hegel, Žižek argues:

Hegel emphasizes again and again that . . . habit provides the background and foundation for every exercise of freedom . . . through habits, a human being transforms his body into a mobile and fluid means, the soul’s instrument, which serves as such without us having to focus consciously on it. In short, through habits, *the subject appropriates the body* . . .⁴²

The ‘freedom’ Žižek speaks of here is the emergent freedom of thought out of being, the transcendent out of the material, the ‘inner’ out of the ‘outer’ in which the outer (the body) comes to be regulated and controlled by this inner (the subject) which itself is first found externally to the individual (in the material of the social). Žižek continues:

The conclusion to be drawn is thus that the only way to account for the emergence of the distinction between the ‘inside’ and ‘outside’ constitutive of a living organism is to posit a kind of self-reflexive reversal by means of which—to put it in Hegelese—the One of an organism as a whole retroactively ‘posits’ as its result, as that which dominates and regulates, the set of its own causes (i.e., the very multiple processes out of which it emerged).⁴³

In interpellation, I am, again pace Althusser, subjected to the materially existing practices and structures of my socio-historical community, which are then reduplicated in me as the inner structure of my subjectivity (that is, in habituation, I internalize these practices as automatic features of my existence—what I am is the internalization of them) and at the same time the ‘inner’ is then thrust back onto the world and is what acts as the ‘virtual’ or ‘immaterial’ limit of the world itself. In other words, I experience this limit—set by me in my subjective conceptual presuppositions, which posit the existence of the big Other—as an externally imposed limit. In this way my own positing activity becomes that which limits me (and my conception of my world) *without my knowing it*. Žižek continues: “In this way—and

only in this way—an organism is no longer limited by external conditions, but is fundamentally self-limited—again, as Hegel would have articulated it, life emerges when the external limitation (of an entity by its environs) turns into self limitation.”⁴⁴

Put concisely, the Lacanian ‘big Other’ is not that which is external to me and limits my subjectivity (as Althusser would have it), but is rather, that internalized-externality which becomes a virtualized subjective posit or presupposition through which I limit myself and thereby also limit my world. In this reduplication, I limit myself but experience this limitation as coming from the world; that is, I do not comprehend it as emanating from me. I remain, in my everyday existence, unaware of my role in this process of limitation. Here, again, is Žižek:

There is a link to Kant here, to the old enigma of what, exactly Kant had in mind with his notion of ‘transcendental apperception,’ of self-consciousness accompanying every act of my consciousness (when I am conscious of something, I am thereby always also conscious of the fact that I am conscious of this?) Is it not an obvious fact that this is empirically not true, that I am not always reflexively aware of my awareness itself?⁴⁵

I am, in a very precise way, *not* aware of the presuppositions that I extend to my world in my everyday quotidian dealings with it, but it is these presuppositions, which act as the very frame and filter of my cognition; however, this frame (and this is the important point) though it is virtual in the sense of being the immaterial imposition of the subject-as-constructed out of the material, has a concrete effect on the reality that I experience (in a Hegelian fashion). It is here that the Althusserian conception of ideology—and the distinction between it and ‘science’ that Althusser attempts to draw in his response to the PCF—returns with a vengeance (though in a modified form): my world is a virtual, ideological construction insofar as it is retroactively posited (by me, in the already described subjective reduplication, without my awareness) as a closed whole, but this positing activity is not merely imaginary; it has real consequences for the world as it exists. In further delineating this point, Žižek invokes Deleuze:

The solution to this dilemma is precisely the notion of virtuality in a strict Deleuzian sense, as the actuality of the possible, as a paradoxical entity, the very possibility of which already produces/has actual effects. One should oppose Deleuze’s notion of the virtual to the all-pervasive topic of virtual reality: what matters to Deleuze is not virtual reality, but the *reality of the virtual* (which in Lacanian terms, is the Real). *Virtual reality* in itself is a rather miserable idea: that of imitating reality, of reproducing its experience in an artificial medium. *The reality of the virtual*, on the other hand, stands for the reality of the virtual as such, for its real effects and consequences.⁴⁶

The ‘virtual’ here is, of course, the term signifying the ‘inner’ immaterial product—the subjective posits/presuppositions—of the ‘outer’ material structures—historically bound social/communal/linguistic practices—that in turn, come to have a decisive effect on the material world. Recall here the Althusserian arguments traced at the end of chapter two regarding the ideological nature of structuralism. There, as we saw, Althusser claims that structuralism becomes ideological insofar as it doesn’t recognize its own status as a theory that is, in the present, constructed out of the particularity of the material as it exists in its given singular moment and instead, retroactively posits the ‘truth’ that it discovers as the origin, or eternal/explanatory truth of social existence. This is analogous to the claim that Žižek makes here about the nature of the subjective posit insofar as the posit is ideological in the same sense as the structuralist theory when it remains unaware of its historical nature. As we will see in the next chapter, the problems that arise for Althusser, namely that he is unable to account for proper extraction from the ideological, are mitigated in Žižek’s Lacanian rehabilitation of the Hegelian concept of change. This will emerge as a central feature of the difference between Žižek’s and Badiou’s respective theories (and their respective readings of Hegel—and Lacan—as we will see), and will involve a return to, and further elaboration on, the link Žižek draws between Hegel and Lacan but, this time, in relation to a (post-Althusserian) Marxism.

NOTES

1. Slavoj Žižek, “Interview” in *The Speculative Turn: Continental Materialism and Realism*, edited by Levi Bryant, Nick Srnicek, and Graham Harman (Victoria: re.press, 2011), 407. Cf. Žižek, *The Parallax View* (Cambridge and London: MIT Press, 2006), 168.
2. G.W.F. Hegel, *Phenomenology of Spirit*, translated by A.V. Miller (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1977), 58.
3. Ibid.
4. Ibid., 60.
5. Ibid.
6. Ibid.
7. See Immanuel Kant, *The Critique of Pure Reason*, translated and edited by Paul Guyer and Allan Wood (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1998).
8. G.W.F. Hegel, *The Science of Logic*, translated by A.V. Miller (Amherst: Humanity Books, 1999), 583.
9. Ibid., 583–584.
10. Hegel, *Introduction to the Philosophy of History*, translated by Leo Rauch (Indianapolis: Hackett, 1988), 12.
11. Slavoj Žižek, *The Ticklish Subject: The Absent Centre of Political Ontology* (London and New York: Verso, 2000), 78.
12. See, for example, Alexandre Kojève, *Introduction to the Reading of Hegel: Lectures on the Phenomenology of Spirit*, translated by James H. Nichols, edited by Allan Bloom (Ithaca: Cornell University Press, 1980); or Robert Pipkin’s excellent *Hegel’s Idealism: The Satisfactions of Self-Consciousness* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1989), in which he reads the historical

nature of the Hegelian project as a developmental story of Consciousness's coming to awareness of the already fixed and determined Kantian categories.

13. Žižek, *Ticklish Subject*, 84.
14. Ibid.
15. Žižek, *Less Than Nothing: Hegel and the Shadow of Dialectical Materialism* (London: Verso, 2012), 387.
16. Ibid., 388.
17. Ibid.
18. Ibid., 389.
19. Ibid.
20. Žižek, "Is it Still Possible to be a Hegelian Today?" in *The Speculative Turn*, 215, my emphasis.
21. Žižek, *Less Than Nothing*, 467.
22. Jacques Lacan, "The Function and Field of Speech and Language in Psychoanalysis" in *Ecrits: A Selection*, translated and edited by Alan Sheridan (New York: Norton, 1977), 65.
23. Ibid.
24. Ibid., 67.
25. Rosalind Coward and John Ellis, *Language and Materialism: Developments in Semiology and the Theory of the Subject* (New York and London: Routledge, 1977), 101.
26. Lacan, *Ecrits*, 68.
27. This is, as noted, a self-consciously Althusserian inflected reading of the Lacanian trope of the mirror stage as the foundation of both subjectivity and the symbolic order in which the subject finds herself. For Lacan's own famous discussion of this, see, Jacques Lacan, "'The Mirror Stage as Formative of the I function as Revealed in Psychoanalysis'" and "'The Function and Field of Speech and Language in Psychoanalysis'" in *Ecrits*, translated by Bruce Fink (New York: Norton, 2006), 197–268, 75–81.
28. Lacan, *Ecrits: A Selection*, 70.
29. Žižek, *Ticklish Subject*, 224.
30. Žižek, *In Defense of Lost Causes* (New York and London: Verso, 2008), 319.
31. Žižek, *Less Than Nothing*, 471.
32. Tom Eyers, *Lacan and the Concept of the Real* (London: Palgrave, 2012), 38.
33. Ibid.
34. Ibid., 127–128.
35. Tom Eyers, "Lacanian Materialism and the Question of the Real" in *Cosmos and History: The Journal of Natural and Social Philosophy*, Vol. 7, No. 1 (2011), 155–166.
36. Ibid.
37. Žižek, *Parallax View*, 17.
38. Adrian Johnston, *Žižek's Ontology*, 166.
39. Žižek, *Parallax View*, 6.
40. Žižek, "Discipline Between Two Freedoms: Madness and Habit in German Idealism" in Markus Gabriel and Slavoj Žižek, *Mythology, Madness, and Laughter: Subjectivity in German Idealism* (New York and London: Continuum, 2009), 100.
41. Ibid., 106.
42. Ibid., 101.
43. Ibid., 106.
44. Ibid.
45. Ibid., 109.
46. Ibid., emphasis in the original.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Coward, Rosalind and John Ellis. *Language and Materialism: Developments in Semiology and the Theory of the Subject*. New York and London: Routledge, 1977.
- Eyers, Tom. *Lacan and the Concept of the Real*. London: Palgrave, 2012.
- . “Lacanian Materialism and the Question of the Real” in *Cosmos and History: The Journal of Natural and Social Philosophy*. Vol. 7, No. 1 (2011). 155–166.
- Hegel, G.W.F. *Introduction to The Philosophy of History*. Translated by Leo Rauch. Indianapolis: Hackett, 1988.
- . *Phenomenology of Spirit*. Translated by A.V. Miller. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1977.
- . *The Science of Logic*. Translated by A.V. Miller. Amherst: Humanity Books, 1999.
- Kant, Immanuel. *The Critique of Pure Reason*. Edited and translated by Paul Guyer and Allan Wood. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1998.
- Kojeve, Alexandre. *Introduction to the Reading of Hegel: Lectures on the Phenomenology of Spirit*. Edited by Alan Bloom, translated by James H. Nichols. Ithaca: Cornell University Press, 1980.
- Lacan, Jacques. “The Function and Field of Speech and Language in Psychoanalysis” in *Écrits: A Selection*. Edited and translated by Alan Sheridan. New York: Norton, 1977. 30–113.
- . “‘The Mirror Stage as Formative of the I function as Revealed in Psychoanalysis’ and ‘The Function and Field of Speech and Language in Psychoanalysis’” in *Écrits*. Translated by Bruce Fink. New York: Norton, 2006. 197–268, 75–81.
- Pippin, Robert. *Hegel’s Idealism: The Satisfactions of Self-Consciousness*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1989.
- Žižek, Slavoj. “Discipline Between Two Freedoms: Madness and Habit in German Idealism” in *Mythology, Madness, and Laughter: Subjectivity in German Idealism*. Edited by Markus Gabriel and Slavoj Žižek. New York and London: Continuum, 2009. 95–118.
- . *In Defense of Lost Causes*. New York and London: Verso, 2008.
- . “‘Interview’ and ‘Is it Still Possible to be a Hegelian Today?’” in *The Speculative Turn: Continental Materialism and Realism*. Edited by Levi Bryant, Nick Srnicek, and Graham Harman. Victoria: Re.press, 2011. 19–20, 202–223.
- . *Less Than Nothing: Hegel and the Shadow of Dialectical Materialism*. London: Verso, 2012.
- . *The Parallax View*. Cambridge and London: MIT Press, 2006.
- . *The Ticklish Subject: The Absent Centre of Political Ontology*. London and New York: Verso, 2000.

6 Žižek Contra Badiou

In the last chapter, we saw that Žižek's appropriation of Hegel via Lacan opens up the possibility of what he has termed a 'non-reductive' materialism in which the 'inner' emerges out of the material or 'outer' of social existence and in this process becomes detached from the outer in such a way as to be irreducible to it. As we also saw, in the first part of this argument, Žižek endorses the Althusserian conception of the material foundations of both a given conjuncture and the individuals that find themselves in it. Subjectivity is first founded on (and in) the particular nexus of (external) social practices, materio-linguistic structures, and meanings that come together at a given moment in history and interpellate individuals. It is the second part of the Žižekian claim that innovates on the Althusserian theory insofar as Žižek is unwilling to agree with Althusser's view that subjectivity is nothing but this interpellated subject. Subjectivity has, for Žižek, a status of its own and is, once interpellated, not simply reducible to these material structures (more on this below).

As we also chapter five, by turning back to Hegel, Žižek is able to account for the immaterial-within-material reduplication of the subject's simultaneous inclusion in the material reality that constructs and constricts it, and at the same time, subjectivity's (quasi-Kantian) role in the positing of that reality within which subjectivity itself is included—through the emergent immaterial conceptual apparatus that is first handed over to it by the external and communal linguistic meanings and practices of which we have said so much. Add to this Žižek's Lacanian-Hegelian claims about the fundamental lack of closure in material being via the conception of the primacy of the Hegelian negative moment in the dialectical process (read here in connection with the Lacanian conception of the real) as the inherent excessive element of the symbolic. The negative-real is, as we have seen, that which stands for the failure of closure in any given symbolic order, the absolute and universal 'not-All' that underlies all perceived totality. We can, by putting all of this together, begin to see Žižek's overall conception of the processes underlying the two categories of stasis and change that we have spent so much time analyzing in relation to both Althusser and Badiou.

Like Badiou, as we will see, for Žižek, subjectivity is the foundation of the possibility of change, though as we will also see, Žižek's theory—despite his

own adoption of Badiouan terminology from time to time—does not necessitate the positing of the intrusion of an external (or even partially external) ‘event’ as the catalyst for such change nor does it rely on a problematic split between ‘being’ as formal ontological multiplicity and ‘presentation’ as structured by the counted-as-one material partial representation of being. It is the subject’s own activity that serves both as the foundation of stasis *and* of the possibility of change for Žižek. We will return to the Badiou/Žižek relation in a moment, but first I should say more about Žižek’s reply to Althusser as this will lay the groundwork for our discussion of the latter relation.

I.

As noted above, Žižek agrees in part with Althusser as to the nature of subjective constitution out of the communal social material, but Žižek counters, in a Hegelian/Lacanian vein, the conjunctural material out of which the subject is first interpellated is not the structured whole/totality that Althusser makes it out to be. This is because, on Žižek’s Hegelian understanding, given conjunctures are never whole nor completely totalizing in the way that Althusser thinks of them. Further, the subject—because it is, once interpellated, irreducible to the material of the social order—is not constrained to merely sustain and reproduce the institutions and practices out of which it emerges.

To be sure, subjectivity does act in this way, in the reduplication that we have described subjectivity does in fact serve as the point from which and through which the material that first constructs it is redeployed and sustained, but subjectivity isn’t *necessarily* subordinated to this function as Althusser would have it. Rather, it only *appears* (to subjects themselves even) that subjectivity is so constrained. Contra Althusser and invoking the Lacanian concept of the ‘big Other’ (the view of the symbolic order as a fully structured totality), Žižek summarizes this point in this way:

With Lacan’s “big Other” the perspective is completely the opposite: the very ‘positing’ of the big Other is a subjective gesture, that is, the “big Other” is a virtual entity that exists only through the subject’s presupposition (this moment is missing in Althusser’s notion of the “Ideological State Apparatuses,” with its emphasis on the “materiality” of the big Other, its material existence in ideological institutions and ritualized practices—Lacan’s big Other is, on the contrary, ultimately virtual and as such, in its most basic dimension, “immaterial”).¹

The idea that there is a fully structured, social whole is a subjective ‘presupposition’ insofar as the conception of the closure of the social as a totalizing big Other, is placed on the world by consciousness-as-interpellated:

this totalization has no existence outside of the subjective presupposition. Althusser misses this point, according to Žižek, because of his singular focus on the material external nature of interpellation—and ideology—and thus he does not sufficiently recognize the dialectical reduplication that is involved in this process.² To be sure, though, this does not mean that the virtual nature of the symbolic, in its ‘immaterial’ existence is devoid of a material foundation. For Žižek, as with the immaterial nature of the subject, the symbolic is precisely a materially generated immaterial posit that ultimately in its positing has a decisive effect on the material that exists, or to put it in more Marxian terms, it has a Real-abstract existence. In order to understand this point, I want to now turn to a topic which I have not said much about yet, namely Žižek’s Marxism, as this will help further make sense of both Žižek’s own overall view here and the reply to Althusser.

One very productive way of understanding Žižek’s Marxism—and in keeping with the theme of the two temporalities of stasis and change—is to read it as an extended attempt to flesh out the meaning and implications of the famous line from the beginning of *The Eighteenth Brumaire of Louis Bonaparte* where Marx writes, “Men make their own history, but they do not make it just as they please; they do not make it under circumstances chosen by themselves, but under circumstances directly encountered, given, and transmitted from the past.”³ In this we see, in an extremely condensed form, the two main components of Marx’s thought on history and social change: on the one hand, individual subjects are who and what they are as a result of the material circumstances and social structures—culture, traditions, practices, government, economies, class, etc.—in which they find themselves; here there is very little actual agency for individuals. On the other hand, however, Marx claims, it is out of this determinism that individuals and groups become able to ‘make history’ or bring about change in the social world and thus have the potential to break the hold of the weight of such history and circumstance. Many commentators, when discussing Žižek’s Marxism, tend to focus primarily on his emphasis on the theory of ideology or his Leninism.⁴ I want to begin with something lesser noted but equally important (and ultimately, foundational for both the conception of ideology, and Žižek’s overall philosophical view), namely the importance Žižek places on Marx’s analysis of the commodity form and its nature as an abstraction.

II.

In *The Sublime Object of Ideology*, Žižek argues that Marx’s conception of the commodity form has been so influential because it:

... offers a kind of matrix enabling us to generate all other forms of the ‘fetishistic inversion’: it is as if the dialectics of the commodity form

presents us with a pure—distilled so to speak—version of a mechanism offering us a key to the theoretical understanding of phenomena which, at first sight, have nothing whatsoever to do with the field of political economy (law, religion, and so on). In the commodity form there is definitely something more at stake than the commodity form itself and it was precisely this ‘more’ which exerted such a fascinating power of attraction.⁵

He goes on to argue, in reference to the work of Alfred Sohn-Rethel on this particular topic, that the commodity form as analyzed by Marx reveals the:

. . . Skeleton of the Kantian transcendental subject . . . Herein lies the paradox of the commodity form: it—this inner-worldly ‘pathological’ (in the Kantian meaning of the word) phenomenon—offers us the key to solving the fundamental question of the theory of knowledge: objective knowledge with universal validity—how is this possible?⁶

What the commodity form, as analyzed by Marx, gives us is a glimpse into the material foundation of subjectivity (and of the society in which subjectivity finds itself) as well as the objective (in a Kantian sense) forms of knowing through which subjects grasp their world. There is no need to rehearse Marx’s detailed analysis of the commodity form here (as it is well-worn territory) but in order to understand the point being made, we should recall briefly that on Marx’s reading of it, a thing is a commodity insofar as it comes to have not merely use-value, but also exchange-value, the latter of which ultimately becomes its defining feature.⁷

In capitalism, exchange-value becomes disconnected from and ultimately comes to dominate use-value. In this way, the commodity form itself is, as Marx’s argues, “characterized by a total abstraction from use-value” reflecting only quantity (or a monetarily quantifiable value)—a quantity that can be measured against other commodities and their value-as-quantity—and not quality.⁸ Further explaining this point, Marx writes:

Could commodities themselves speak, they would say: our use-value may be a thing of interest to men. It is no part of us as objects. What however does belong to us as objects is our value. Our natural intercourse as commodities proves it. In the eyes of each other, we are nothing but exchange-values.⁹

Both exchange-value, and the commodity that results from it, are born of a social relation, or an act, namely, the exchange of commodities. This act is itself born in a particular social context (capitalism). In this act, the abstraction that is the commodity is, as Marx describes in the passage above, treated *as if* it is the bearer of value in-itself (and not simply of use to individuals)

and it ultimately becomes this ‘as-if.’ It is here that Sohn-Rethel’s analysis of Marx becomes important according to Žižek. Sohn-Rethel shows us that this ‘as-if’ does not arise in the consciousness of those who engage in the exchange of commodities, but it is the structure inherent to this that determines the very being of that consciousness. Here is Sohn-Rethel:

The essence of commodity abstraction, however, is that it is not thought-induced; it does not originate in men’s minds, but in their actions. And yet this does not give ‘abstraction’ a merely metaphorical meaning. It is an abstraction in its precise literal sense. The economic concept of value resulting from it is characterized by a complete absence of quality, a differentiation purely by quantity and by applicability to every kind of commodity and service which can occur in the market . . . It exists nowhere other than in the human mind but it does not spring from it. Rather it is purely social in character, arising in the sphere of spatio-temporal human relations. It is [again] not people who originate these abstractions, but their actions.¹⁰

There are two important features of the Marxian analysis that Sohn-Rethel seeks to clarify here (and that Žižek both agrees with and wishes to extend). First, the abstraction inherent in the commodity form is, as noted above, founded on human action. The point here is similar to the point that Althusser makes in his view—explored extensively in chapter two—that it is action, or social practice, that is primary and consciousness is built upon this.¹¹ Second, as also noted above, consciousness in this conjuncture is the result of a particular form of social existence (namely the capitalist form): It is this abstraction that does the determining of the form of thought for individuals that exist under capitalism and within capitalist modes of production with their attendant social relations.

Though we can see broad agreement between Sohn-Rethel and Althusser, insofar as both see social practice as being prior to and determinative of the consciousness of individuals, Sohn-Rethel criticizes portions of Althusser’s reading of Marx’s analysis of commodity abstraction for the latter’s seeing it as a metaphorical analysis rather than taking it literally.¹² As we have seen, Žižek also agrees broadly with the Althusserian thesis regarding the primacy of practice. In *The Sublime Object*, however, Žižek opts for Sohn-Rethel’s analysis over-against that of Althusser insofar as it radicalizes the Althusserian “distinction between the real object and the object of knowledge” and allows us to view abstraction as a “third element which subverts the very field of this distinction; the form of thought previous and external to thought—in short: the symbolic order.”¹³ I will return to a discussion of Žižek’s linking of Sohn-Rethel’s critique of the commodity form to the Lacanian concept of the symbolic below. For now, the important point here is that abstraction, as both Marx and Žižek understand it, is not to be thought of as metaphorical, something which has no reality, or finally, a distortion of

an underlying non-abstract existence. The abstraction that is the commodity form, its attendant act, and the forms of consciousness that are derived from it, is very real and as just pointed out, ultimately foundational.

I want to pause for a moment here to point out that the conception of abstraction that Žižek is interested in is that of Marx's mature, post-1857, renovation of the Feuerbachian notion of abstraction—what Alberto Toscano (with reference to Roberto Finelli) calls the 'real-abstract' or 'real-abstraction'—which is, as Toscano puts it:

. . . A break with a generic, humanist, or anthropological concept of abstraction: the passage to a notion of *real abstraction*—abstraction not merely as a mask, fantasy, or diversion, but as a force operative in the world . . . the crucial theoretical revolution would then be one that passes through this fundamentally intellectualist notion of abstraction—which presumes liberation as a 'recovery' of the presupposed genus (putting Man where God, qua distorted humanity, had once stood)—to a vision of abstraction that, rather than depicting it as a structure of illusion, recognizes it as a social, historical, and 'transindividual' phenomenon.¹⁴

We should be able to see another connection to Althusser here, the Real-abstract as described by Toscano (and understood by Žižek) is only understandable from an Althusserian view of Marx's development: this notion of the Real-abstract only comes into existence after Marx's epistemological break with Hegel and Feuerbach. On this view, there is no illusion in abstraction. The abstraction of the commodity form and the web of human relations that determine it are what is 'real' full-stop. The real-abstraction that is the commodity form is, as Toscano argues, the 'transindividual' phenomenon that acts to determine both capitalist society and the ways in which individual capitalist subjects come into being (from capitalist subjectivity, to proletarian subjectivity, and every other possible subject of capital). Or, as Toscano puts it here (giving it a proper Hegelian inflection): "this real-abstract movement of totalization is capital qua substance becoming 'Subject.'"¹⁵

Furthermore, in referring to real-abstraction as 'transindividual,' Toscano points us to Balibar, who argues in *The Philosophy of Marx* that though he did not have the terminology to name the 'transindividual phenomena' as such, it is a concept that captures Marx's meaning when he writes in the *Theses on Feuerbach* of the human essence as nothing more than the "ensemble of social relations" that exist at a given time (of which the abstraction that is the commodity-form and the act of exchange upon which it is based, is a part under capitalism).¹⁶ Balibar continues:

The words Marx uses reject *both* the individualist point of view (the primacy of the individual, and especially the fiction of an individuality which could be defined *in itself*, in isolation, whether in terms of

biology, psychology, economic behavior or whatever), and the organicist point of view (which today, following the *Anglo-American* usage, is also called the holistic point of view: the primacy of the *whole*, and particularly of society considered as an indivisible unity of which individuals are functional members).¹⁷

Here we begin to see a link back to the first part of Marx's claim from the *Eighteenth Brumaire* quoted earlier. Individual subjects and the form of thought that attends these subjects are—pace the real-abstraction founded in the act of commodity exchange—what they are as a *result* of the social relations in which they are enmeshed. The social form of commodity exchange (and the social practice that supports it) is *prior to* subjective constitution, and it is that through which individuals become the subjects that they are.

I want to return now to Žižek's introduction of the Lacanian concept of the symbolic into this reading of Marxian abstraction. First, however, to supplement Balibar's and Toscano's linking of the real-abstract to transindividuality, I want to point out that, as Balibar himself notes, Lacan is one of those who offers us a theoretic that allows for a conception of transindividuality that condenses and clarifies what is at stake in Marx's analysis of abstraction and of the commodity form.¹⁸ Elaborating on this, Žižek shows us how the symbolic order functions in the same manner as Marxian 'real-abstraction':

. . . Insofar as Lacan defines the symbolic order as neither objective nor subjective, but precisely as the order of *intersubjectivity*, is not the perfect candidate for this third logic of intersubjectivity the psychoanalytic 'log of the signifier' that deploys the strange structure of the subject's relationship to the Other qua his symbolic substance, the space in which he interacts with other subjects?¹⁹

In fact, this should help further make sense of both the argument that real-abstraction and the commodity form are themselves foundational to the production of subjectivity under capitalism and give us some insight into how such a foundation is itself not an illusion, while at the same time also remaining an abstraction. What intervenes between the objective—taken as the 'brute' empirical fact—and the subjective—thought—is precisely the symbolic order.

Recall Žižek's example of this discussed in chapter five in relation to how we, as socio-linguistic subjects, come to hear 'meaning' in what are otherwise nothing more than brute linguistic utterances (we have to 'see through' these utterances in order to hear meaning). In this way, as with the practice of commodity exchange, and pace the Lacanian conception, language and meaning is a transindividual, intersubjective, real-abstract *thing* that is formed out of the relations between various historically grounded linguistic meanings and practices that exist in a given socio-historical space,

in connection with the inert material of the signifier-in-isolation, the totality of which can be likened to a social substance or Spirit (Geist) in Hegelian parlance.

Such a substance is, as Žižek argues, the third moment in the triad and acts to interpellate individuals as its subjects insofar as individuals enter into the pre-existing meanings—and the practices that support them—of a given socio-historical community, so much so that, as in the example given above, even our very physical apparatuses (hearing in this instance) are trained by this substance in its constituting us as subjects. Returning now to the real-abstraction of the commodity form, here, again, is Žižek echoing much of what we have said already while at the same time reiterating the Marxian analysis of the violent nature of capital:

. . . This “abstraction” . . . is the “real” in the precise sense of determining the structure of material social processes themselves: The fate of whole swaths of the population and sometimes whole countries can be decided by the “solipsistic” speculative dance of capital, which pursues its goal of profitability with blessed indifference to how its movements will affect social reality. Therein lies the fundamental systemic violence of capitalism . . . no longer attributable to concrete individuals and their “evil” intentions, but is purely “objective,” systemic, anonymous.²⁰

Žižek continues,

Here we encounter the Lacanian difference between the reality and the Real: “Reality” is the social reality of the actual people involved in interaction and the productive process, while the Real is the inexorable “abstract” spectral logic of Capital that determines what goes on in social reality.²¹

So, putting all of this together, we might say that the ‘Reality’ of systemic violence is imposed on individual subjects of capital by the ‘Real,’ which is itself the result of the social practices (such as the act of commodity exchange). These practices, in turn, make up the real-abstract, intersubjective, transindividual, symbolic substrate within which such subjects are founded.

The Hegelian background to this should also not be missed. Think again of Žižek’s discussion of the role of habituation in Hegel as the means whereby what is external (ritualized communal practices, linguistic structures and the like) becomes internalized in such a way as to create the individual’s awareness and then is redeployed by those individuals as that through which the world is comprehended, structured, and organized. The world appears to us in the way that it does as a result of our activity, which is itself a reduplication of that which first constructs this activity. Here is Žižek—in a

quote already cited in chapter five, but that should be recalled again in this context—discussing this point:

The conclusion to be drawn is thus that the only way to account for the distinction between the ‘inside’ and ‘outside’ constitutive of a living organism is to posit a kind of self-reflexive reversal by means of which—to put it in Hegelese—the One of an organism as a Whole retroactively posits as its result, as that which dominates and regulates, the set of its own causes (i.e., the very multiple process out of which it emerged).²²

What now of the second half of Marx’s dictum from the *Eighteenth Brumaire*? What of the claim that people can make their own history? If the story, as I have told it thus far, accounts for stasis, as it offers an explanation of the ways in which subjectivity supports and reproduces the set of social/communal traditions, practices, and habits that first interpellate it—via a retroactively posited virtualized totalization—it also offers us insight into the ways in which the possibility of change appears on the scene according to Žižek. Rejecting the Althusserian notion that subjectivity is simply reducible to the practices and institutions that interpellate it (and thereby fully constructed and determined by them) and instead claiming that once interpellated, subjectivity is not so reducible, but rather a Real-abstraction that brings with it the possibility of an existence unmoored to its ideological roots, gives us an indication of a first form of change that exists (even when such an irreducible subject continues to merely serve as the ideological support of a given social order) on Žižek’s accounting of things. That there are ‘subjects’ at all is a change (as the subject is the immaterial shift that arises out of the material); further, Žižek’s account of subjectivity’s nature as self-limiting makes its own action the foundation for change. We can now turn to an explanation of this point and its relation to the Badiouan account of change.

III.

Where there are, for Badiou, ‘events’ that are the catalyst for change, there are for Žižek, ‘acts’—yet another term taken over from Lacan—that serve a similar function. Johnston provides us with a succinct description of the Lacanian background of this concept.²³ As Johnston explains, in the fifteenth seminar, Lacan draws a distinction between what he calls ‘action’ and what he calls the ‘act.’ Here is Johnston on this distinction:

The former is simply some sort of natural and/or automatic process (for instance the body’s motor activities). The latter by contrast, involves a dimension over and above that of something like the mundane material occurrence. A proper act has symbolic repercussions; it transgresses the

rules of the symbolic order, thereby destabilizing the big Other in revealing its flaws, inconsistencies and vulnerabilities. Whereas action is part of the normal run of things, an act disrupts the predictable cycles governing particular realities, forcing transformations of regulated systems in response to its intrusive irruption.²⁴

For Žižek then, the Lacanian ‘act’ has an effect similar to that of the Badiouan ‘event’ insofar as it has the power of disrupting the normal flow of static time in such a way as to radically reorganize it. Furthermore, the transformative effects of such an act are not limited to the externally existing order. The act also necessarily brings about a change in those individuals who experience it. This is the further similarity between the Badiouan event and the Žižekian/Lacanian act: the act has the effect of reorienting the subject as well as the world in which the subject finds herself, and because it has this effect—of both disrupting the symbolic and the subject—it is experienced by the subject in the same way that the event is for Badiou: as something which *happens* to the subject, not as something that the subject does. Here again is Johnston:

One remarkable feature of the act that Lacan does indeed go out of his way to underscore is that this disruptive gesture is not the outcome of prior deliberations on the part of self-conscious reflection . . . Hence it seems as though the act is an impossible miraculous occurrence that emerges and befalls individuals who are, at least at first, subjected to the act’s subjective reverberations.²⁵

Before commenting on this, I want to first note a crucial difference here between the Badiouan conception of the subject and the Žižekian conception, which has a decisive effect in differentiating the two accounts in this context.

As should already be apparent by what has been said so far, whereas Badiou rejects any notion of a pre-evental subjectivity and instead relegates pre-subjective individuals to the status of objects, determined simply by the externally imposed counting operation—arguing instead that events ‘subjectivize’ individuals—Žižek’s theory requires the pre-act existence of self-limiting subjects for there to be any acts whatsoever (and hence any change). This point tracks the Lacanian distinction, elaborated on by Johnston, between ‘action’ and the ‘act.’

The subject is the point through which, in everyday quotidian ‘action,’ a given social structure or conjuncture is ordered and sustained (as we have seen) insofar as it is such a subject that, through the action of self-limiting and limiting the world to presuppositions handed over to it, posits—in an ideological form—a given conjuncture as Whole. In answer to the question of ‘what does the structuring?’, Žižek need not, as Badiou does, posit the existence of a reified, abstract, and formal process such as the ‘count-as-one.’

It is subjectivity itself that does the 'counting' here in its reduplication and redeployment of the material structures of the community.

Further, because the external material communal structures that undergird the inner life of the subject are themselves always and universally historical and partial, subjectivity is also at its very core a 'not-All' insofar as it is itself never fully structured and totalized (though it does not recognize this in its quotidian 'action'). This latter point is what gets revealed to the subject in the space of the 'act' and is what leads to the possibility of change. When the (subject's own) act reveals to her the inherent lack of totalization, it also reveals the fact that her world is 'not-All' there is, that it is not totalized. This then has the effect of extracting her from her previously conditioned existence, thereby changing both herself and the world that she inhabits insofar as her own ordering activity—the subjective presuppositions through which the world is ordered—is shifted by the act.

IV.

Žižek struggles throughout his works to articulate the conditions of existence for such a transformational subject. Many of his most decisive examples are drawn from literature and movies. These fictive examples function for Žižek, much like the 'thought experiment' functions in other philosophical contexts, they provide a nice demonstration of the phenomena under consideration. Such examples move beyond the classical philosophical thought experiment, however, insofar as they tend to mimic the actual behavior of people and therefore are more forceful (in my mind anyway) than many of the quite far-fetched philosophical 'thought experiments' that academic philosophers are willing to accept. Though this is a bit of an aside, I offer this commentary here in anticipation of the objection that using a fictive example is problematic.

That said, I wish to focus on one of these attempts, namely Žižek's analysis of the figure of Melville's *Bartleby the Scrivener* in the short story that bears his name. As the story goes, Bartleby, when asked to do just about anything, responds with the phrase "I prefer not to."²⁶ Through its repetition, this act can come to negating the order that gives rise to it, as it literally becomes an unconditional refusal that stops making sense from within the symbolic/ideological space of reasons. Such a refusal, as Žižek puts it, ". . . is a signifier turned object, a signifier reduced to an inert stain that stands for the collapse of the symbolic order."²⁷ What Bartleby's move does—without his conscious awareness initially—according to Žižek, much more than simply refuse an order, is that it calls the perceived universality of the given conjuncture into question by saying no to the structure itself through a refusal to participate in the forms of action that are sanctioned by it.²⁸ The motivation for this action is first found within the existing symbolic order; one is called upon to act in a certain manner that is fitting of a certain kind of subject

but the response (the “I would prefer not to”) comes to act as a rejection of both that call *and* the subjectivity that it addresses. This opens up a space in which both the call and subjectivity itself can be viewed as non-totalizing and not-All there is. Furthermore, this also reveals the universality-as-lack-of-closure that underlies all subjective presupposition whatsoever.

Making the Hegelian background in Žižek’s reading of this explicit will help to clarify the ways in which this ‘act,’ in this context, though a product of subjective activity, can be experienced by the subject analogously to the way that the ‘event’ is in the Badiouan account of change but without all of the problems that attend the Badiouan edifice. As my reading of this through the eyes of Žižek’s (Lacanian) Hegel makes clear, Bartleby’s act is itself an act that supplies its own content or, to put this a different way, the negativity inherent in the refusal is also *at the same moment* the creation of a new possibility and, in this way, simultaneously positive in its negation.

Recall (again) that according to Lacan, we become the kinds of beings that we are in relation to the Real-abstract Symbolic, which both calls us into existence (interpellates us) and makes up the background of meaning for the world that we experience. In Bartleby’s case this interpellative process begins when he is called upon by his boss to perform a certain task that fits his position, namely, to look over and transcribe some documents, to which he responds for the first time with the famous phrase. It is thus within the world of structured and ordered meanings that appear to Bartleby as being fixed and external to him, that Bartleby first commits himself to his cause: to respond to the interpellative call with a refusal. In the commitment to (repetitious) refusal, however, the destitution of the particular content (and meanings) of the order/ordering mechanism is secured. The key point to see here is that through its repetition, the refusal itself *has the same interpellative effect* as the initial call, but this time it is Bartleby’s own commitment to the cause that acts as the thing which constitutes him as a subject and not the call (perceived as) issuing from the symbolic. Thus, it is *his own act* that interpellates him as freed from the order that he initially posited as totalizing. Here we find ourselves not only in Lacan’s territory but also in Hegelian waters. The act that Bartleby brings about is akin to the action effected by consciousness’s move to skepticism in the *Phenomenology of Spirit*. Recall skepticism as:

. . . a moment of self-consciousness, to which it does not *happen* that its truth and reality vanish without its knowing how, but which in the certainty of its freedom, *makes* this ‘other’ which claims to be real, vanish. What skepticism causes to vanish is not only objective reality as such, but its own relationship to it.²⁹

Self-consciousness recognizes the contingent nature of what it once took to be necessary—the necessity that is destroyed is nothing other than self-consciousness’s relationship to the external Other, in the form of the Lord,

who has (it believes) determined its existence up to this point. The same holds true for Bartleby's refusal to do what he is asked. Žižek writes:

His "I would prefer not to" is to be taken literally: it says "I would prefer not to," *not* "I don't prefer (or care) to" . . . In his refusal of the Master's order, Bartleby does not negate the predicate, rather he affirms the non-predicate: he does not say that he doesn't want to do it, he says that he prefers (wants) not to do it. This is how we pass from the politics of "resistance" or "protestation," which parasites on what it negates, to a politics which opens up a new space outside the hegemonic position and its negation.³⁰

Returning to Hegel, we can see the relationship between what Žižek is pointing out and the moment of skepticism. In the active negation of the Master's world (the world in which the skeptic was once immersed and presented itself as a necessary and transcendent world), the skeptic finds himself to have a minimal freedom: necessity disappears for self-consciousness—not as it did in past moments, without its knowledge of how or why—but rather self-consciousness recognizes that *it is the one* who has made this necessity disappear, that this change issues from it. It accomplishes this by negating all positive content that comes to it from without. As with Bartleby, who says "I would prefer not to" in response to any attempt to get him to act, in his own negative activity, the skeptic frees himself from the earlier relationship he had to the master.

Freedom is thus tied directly to this act, as Hegel notes, "through this self-conscious negation it [self-consciousness] procures for its own self the certainty of its freedom, *generates the experience of that freedom*, and thereby raises it to truth."³¹ It is only in the practice of active negation of all seemingly external positive content that freedom from the enslavement to the other is realized. It is critical that we recognize that this freedom is not something that existed prior to this action (and just needs to be realized). For Hegel, freedom can only appear on the scene *in* this activity; self-consciousness was not free at all until its own action gave it that possibility. This freedom is immanently generated in the act of negation.

To be sure, initially, the negative action of the skeptic, is tied to the positive order as Hegel notes:

It [self-consciousness] pronounces an absolute vanishing, but the pronouncement *is*, and this consciousness is the vanishing that is pronounced. It affirms the nullity of seeing, hearing etc., yet it itself is seeing, hearing etc., It affirms the nullity of ethical principles and lets its conduct be governed by these principles . . . it has itself the doubly contradictory consciousness of changeableness and sameness, and of utter contingency and non-identity with itself.³²

The upshot of this, however, is that here consciousness experiences this split (the split between its activity of negation and the positive content which

the negation is tied to) not as a split external to itself but rather one that cuts across the very center of its being: both the positive order and its negation are found to be (through this action) *within* self-consciousness, within it as a subject. Hegel continues:

Skepticism's lack of thought about itself must vanish, because it is in fact *one* consciousness which contains within itself these two modes. This new form is, therefore, one which *knows* that it is the dual consciousness of itself, as self-liberating, unchangeable, and self-identical, and as self-bewildering and self-perverting, and it is the awareness of this self-contradictory nature of itself.³³

What propels the forward movement of the dialectic here (for Hegel) is the newfound awareness of the split as not one of external imposition/internal negation but rather that both of these sides are inherent in the subject. That is, the subject recognizes, pace Žižek, that the 'big Other' is a subjective posit and that not only is the communal world not fully determined, but that the subject herself is not either, that such determination is itself nothing more than an ideological posit.

Furthermore, in the space of the 'act,' the subject is both that which acts to negate the order *and* that which, through this negation, becomes (for itself) unchangeable and stable—it enacts its own stability in its continued negative activity. The subject recognizes her own inherent potential in this. The same is true for Bartleby: he becomes the thing that he is through the continued habit of the negation of commands that come from without. In doing this, he finds himself—in an enacted freedom from the externality of the interpellative call—as a new stable being in the process of that negation (the stability offered in the activity of negation).

As Hegel points out, what we find here is the *production* of the positive freedom of the subject *in and out of* the moment of negation. It is through this activity that the subject comes to the awareness of her being as split, who is both free from external constraint in her ability to actively negate external reality—as that which was immediately seen as this "external constraint," now comes to be viewed as internally posited—and at the same time finds herself as the source of stability. So what we are faced with is precisely the traumatic product of the rejection of the symbolic produced by the refusal: the internally contradictory nature of subjectivity itself. The subject is nothing other than the Real-abstract "gap" between the positive content of the symbolic order and its negation (both of which are internal to its activity). It is both the foundation and source of all stability and determination and *at the same* time the recognition of the (universal) lack of absolute determination. Žižek writes:

This brings us back to the central theme . . . Bartleby's attitude is not merely the first, preparatory, stage for the second, more "constructive"

work of forming a new alternative order; it is the very source and background of this order, its permanent foundation . . . The very frantic and engaged activity of constructing a new order is sustained by an underlying “I would prefer not to” which forever reverberates in it—or as Hegel might have put it, the new post-revolutionary order does not negate its founding gesture, the explosion of the destructive fury that wipes away the Old; it merely *gives body* to this negativity.³⁴

That is, Bartleby’s act of negation which is the “source” of the “new” remains its “foundation” because it is this act that, as we have seen, first makes us aware of the illusory nature of the externality and externally necessity of the authority of the old order. Recall here the Hegelian claim that the skeptic’s action makes external reality “vanish.” This is nothing other than the realization that what one once took to be externally (and necessarily) imposed is rather only so as long as one acts based on this belief, which points to the fact that what was thought to be externally imposed was rather imposed on the subject *by himself* all along (in the subject’s self-limiting activity). This action then is the recognition that it is the subject herself who acts to sustain the order and thus it is also the subject herself who can challenge its assertion of authority as neither the order, nor her (ideologically) interpellated subjectivity is fully determined. In other words, in the ‘act’ the subject comes to recognize the ‘virtual’ nature of the Whole.

It is in this negative activity itself that one becomes able—in a Hegelian fashion—to *enact* one’s freedom from the constraints of this imposed external reality. To be sure, the freedom that is founded here is nothing more than the freedom from the imposed/imposing demand of the old order as viewed as external to the subject; it is not an absolute freedom. There is still subjection; it is simply that subjection is now recognized for what it is: again, as something that is internally imposed on the subject by herself. What is then built out of this is, in this way, founded on the stability that is produced in the continued habitualized negation (the gap that is internal to the subject—the experience of the subject as both that which negates and is free and that which finds itself as a stable being in this negation). We should, moreover, take literally the Hegelian claim that Žižek makes at the end of this remark, namely that “body” is given this negativity.

It is thus the case that in acting in fidelity to the recognition that arises as the result of the act, we give material body to a new possibility. Recall again the structure of the non-reductive materialist dialectical reduplication that Žižek describes in which what is external is the material foundation for the production of the internal which then is what, through the conceptual apparatus provided by the action of the internal ‘posits,’ through the set of virtual presuppositions, the external as standing over-against the internal.

This process is not changed in the ‘act,’ what is changed is both the content of the virtual set of presuppositions and the subject’s relation to them (here the subject is aware of the process in a way that it was not before).

Thus, subjectivity gains a new disposition and along with it, a new relation to the world, which, as such, brings with it a new world in actuality. The rest of the Žižekian story of change is similar to the Badiouan account in that, such a ‘new’ subjectivity must work to change the world, insofar as it must work to sustain the ‘new’ world that is already a part of its subjective presuppositions insofar as it is ushered in by its act.

Of course, Žižek’s example of *Bartleby* and the politics of refusal are not the only modes of the political act. It is well known that Žižek will at times recommend withdrawal and at others he will recommend engagement in a very particular way; and at still others, he will argue that we must be willing to act even in the absence of a clear pathway to the outcome we desire. This last category can be seen in his critiques of the left that is unwilling to do anything for fear of bringing about a new gulag.³⁵ Commenting on this recently, Agon Hamza has rightly pointed out that far from this meaning that Žižek’s politics are in some way inconsistent what this points to is the truly materialist nature of his project. According to Hamza, Žižek’s position is that:

. . . Whatever the concrete situation, the relation of the subject to itself is always one of cutting off whatever ties one to the dominant ideology. Or, to put it differently, we could argue that the Žižekian-Hegelian thesis, underlying the political orientation, is that the way a situation doesn’t work as the mere “case” of a universal idea is precisely how the universal is grounded in that situation. In other words, Žižek treats conjunctures not as cases but examples.³⁶

The point here, is that the Žižekian act will be different in different situations, depending on the particulars of that situation and what it looks like that situation might call for. Though this is the case, if the act is truly an act, it will have the same interpellative effect on the subject. There is yet another important relation to Althusser to be found in this. In Althusser’s very short (and curious) “Portrait of a Materialist Philosopher,” he attempts to make sense of what it is to be a materialist by telling a metaphorical story set in the American old West.³⁷ In this story, the protagonist (the materialist) “doesn’t know where he is, but wants to go somewhere,” and so he gets on a moving train without knowing exactly where it is going (or where it came from).³⁸ He then he gets off somewhere and makes use of what he finds there, building himself a life (i.e., doing something), eventually becoming quite well known. As Althusser tells this story, the protagonist gains his reputation by buying livestock and eventually gaining “the best bunch of animals around.” Althusser continues:

The best bunch of animals = the best bunch of categories and concepts. He [the protagonist] competes with the other landowners, but peacefully. Everyone admits that he’s the best and that his categories and

concepts (his heard) are the best. His reputation spreads throughout the West and eventually the whole country.³⁹

Isn't Žižek's pragmatic stance on politics exactly this position? It does not matter where one comes from and one does not have to know where one is going, what matters is that one try, given the conjuncture and the existing arrangement of concepts, practices, institutions, and so forth to find a way to make those work, to break with the ideology in which one is first formed. As such, isn't it also the case that this work, the action one takes, must be tied to that very conjuncture? And further, one cannot know in advance just which action might work, but one must try.

We should now be able to clearly see a further important distinction between the Badiouan account and the Žižekian one. Žižek's Hegelian/Lacanian materialist conception of both stasis and change never leaves the materialist history in which it emerges. That is, there is no split between synchrony and diachrony in which the synchronic stands outside of the diachronic and does the determining of the particular nature of the diachronic, as it does in Badiou's account; nor is there a need for an intervening event for change to take place. What is detached from a given conjuncture and ushers in the possibility of change in Žižek's account emerges from within it. What is universal and universally 'true' is the lack of closure that underlies the nature of the materio-symbolic order, but this universal 'not-All' *comes to be* in the partial, pathological, and contingent nature of history insofar as the subject's own awareness of this comes to be in history and this awareness (if properly habituated) becomes the foundation of the universal truth itself.

NOTES

1. Slavoj Žižek, *In Defense of Lost Causes* (New York and London: Verso, 2009), 113–114.
2. It should be noted here that Žižek also takes ideology to be grounded in the material practices subjects engage in (it is not just a matter of mistaken knowledge); he just, as we will see later in this chapter, takes the positing of presuppositions to be as material as any other practice.
3. Karl Marx, *The Eighteenth Brumaire of Louis Bonaparte* in *Karl Marx: Selected Writings 2nd Edition*, edited by David McLellan (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2006), 329.
4. See for instance, Matthew Sharpe, "Žižek" in *From Agamben to Žižek*, edited by Jon Simons (Edinburgh: Edinburgh University Press, 2010), and Ian Parker, *Slavoj Žižek: A Critical Introduction* (London and Sterling: Pluto Press, 2004).
5. Slavoj Žižek, *The Sublime Object of Ideology* (London and New York: Verso, 1989, 2008), 9.
6. *Ibid.*, 10.
7. See Karl Marx, *Critique of Political Economy*, translated by N.I. Stone (Chicago: Charles Kerr, 1904).
8. Marx, *Capital Volume One* in *Karl Marx: Selected Writings*, 460.

9. Ibid., 480.
10. Alfred Sohn-Rethel, *Intellectual and Manual Labor: A Critique of Epistemology*, translated by Martin Sohn-Rethel (London: MacMillan, 1978), 20.
11. For Althusser's own description of the foundational nature of social practice, see Louis Althusser, "Ideology and Ideological State Apparatuses" in *Lenin and Philosophy and Other Essays*, translated by Ben Brewster (New York and London: Monthly Review Press, 1971), 127–186.
12. Sohn-Rethel, *Intellectual and Manual Labor: A Critique of Epistemology*, translated by Martin Sohn-Rethel (London: MacMillan, 1978), 20.
13. Žižek, *Sublime Object*, 19. When discussing Althusser, I did not spend any time discussing his views on the commodity form in Marx as it was not really all that relevant to the goals of this book, but the reader can find these in Louis Althusser and Etienne Balibar, *Reading Capital*, translated by Ben Brewster (London and New York: Verso, 2009), especially 95–98 and 287–291.
14. Alberto Toscano, "The Open Secret of Real Abstraction" in *Re-Thinking Marxism: A Journal of Economics, Society, and Culture*, Vol. 20, No. 2 (2008), 273–287.
15. Ibid.
16. Marx, *Theses on Feuerbach* in *Karl Marx: Selected Writings*, 172.
17. Etienne Balibar, *The Philosophy of Marx*, translated by Chris Turner (New York and London: Verso, 1995), 31.
18. Ibid. He points this out directly after the passage cited above.
19. Žižek, *The Ticklish Subject: The Absent Centre of Political Ontology* (New York and London: Verso, 2000), 81.
20. Žižek, *Less Than Nothing: Hegel and the Shadow of Dialectical Materialism* (New York and London: Verso, 2012), 244.
21. Ibid.
22. Žižek, "Discipline Between Two Freedoms: Madness and Habit in German Idealism" in *Mythology, Madness, and Laughter*, edited by Gabriel and Žižek (New York and London: Continuum, 2009), 106.
23. Adrian Johnston, *Badiou, Žižek, and Political Transformations: The Cadence of Change* (Evanston: Northwestern University Press, 2009).
24. Ibid., 110.
25. Ibid., 110–111.
26. See Herman Melville, "Bartleby the Scrivener" in *Herman Melville: Moby Dick, Billy Bud and Other Writings*, edited by Thomas Transelle (New York: Penguin, 2000), 639–678.
27. Žižek, PV 383.
28. Ibid.
29. Hegel, *Phenomenology of Spirit*, 124.
30. Žižek, *Parallax View*, 381–382.
31. Hegel, *Phenomenology of Spirit*, 124.
32. Ibid.
33. Ibid., 126.
34. Žižek, *Parallax View*, 382.
35. See Žižek, *The Ticklish Subject*, 352.
36. Agon Hamza, "A Plea for a Žižekian Politics" in *Repeating Žižek*, (Durham, NC: Duke University Press, Forthcoming).
37. Althusser, "Portrait of a Materialist Philosopher" in *Louis Althusser: Philosophy of the Encounter, Later Writings 1978–1987*, edited by François Mathéron and Oliver Corpet, (New York and London: Verso, 2006), 290–291.
38. Ibid.
39. Ibid.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Althusser, Louis. "Portrait of a Materialist Philosopher" in *Louis Althusser: Philosophy of the Encounter, Later Writings 1978–1987*. New York and London: Verso, 2006. 290–291.
- Althusser, Louis and Etienne Balibar. *Reading Capital*. Translated by Ben Brewster. London and New York: Verso, 2009.
- Balibar, Etienne. *The Philosophy of Marx*. Translated by Chris Turner. New York and London: Verso, 1995.
- Hamza, Agon. "A Plea For a Žižekian Politics" in *Repeating Žižek*. Durham: Duke University Press, Forthcoming 2015.
- Johnston, Adrian. *Badiou, Žižek, and Political Transformations: The Cadence of Change*. Evanston: Northwestern University Press, 2009.
- Marx, Karl. *Critique of Political Economy*. Translated by N.I. Stone. Chicago: Charles Kerr, 1904.
- McLellan, David. *Karl Marx: Selected Writings 2nd Edition*. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2006.
- Melville, Herman. "Bartleby the Scrivener" in *Herman Melville: Moby Dick, Billy Budd and Other Writings*. Edited by Thomas Transelle. New York: Penguin, 2000. 639–678.
- Parker, Ian. *Slavoj Žižek: A Critical Introduction*. London and Sterling: Pluto Press, 2004.
- Sharpe, Matthew. "Žižek" in *From Agamben to Žižek*. Edited by Jon Simons. Edinburgh: Edinburgh University Press, 2010. 243–258.
- Sohn-Rethel, Alfred. *Intellectual and Manual Labor: A Critique of Epistemology*. Translated by Martin Sohn-Rethel. London: MacMillan, 1978.
- Toscano, Alberto. "The Open Secret of Real Abstraction" in *Re-Thinking Marxism: A Journal of Economics, Society, and Culture*. Vol. 20, No. 2 (2008). 273–287.
- Žižek, Slavoj. "Discipline Between Two Freedoms: Madness and Habit in German Idealism" in *Mythology, Madness, and Laughter: Subjectivity in German Idealism*. Edited by Markus Gabriel and Slavoj Žižek. New York and London: Continuum, 2009. 95–121.
- . *In Defense of Lost Causes*. New York and London: Verso, 2009.
- . *Less Than Nothing: Hegel and the Shadow of Dialectical Materialism*. New York and London: Verso, 2012.
- . *The Sublime Object of Ideology*. London and New York: Verso, 1989, 2008.
- . *The Ticklish Subject: The Absent Centre of Political Ontology*. New York and London: Verso, 2000.

Conclusion

New Materialism?

The title of this study makes a claim about the nature of the materialism that is espoused by those whose thought it occupies. It claims that there is a 'new' materialism here. That there is something different in this materialism than materialisms that came before or that it does not simply re-hash long-standing materialist claims. As noted in the introduction, the newness claim is mostly limited to the thought of Badiou and Žižek, as Althusser serves as a common reference point for both, and a background against which these two are reacting.

It seems that, having worked our way through the various claims these three thinkers make *vis-à-vis* materialism, and having demonstrated their shared theoretical focal points as well as the problems that they encounter along the way, arguing that the later Badiou's problems make his materialism suspect, we are now in a position to assess this 'newness.' I wish to begin this assessment in the reverse, that is, I want to begin by discussing a few ways in which we might be able to say that these positions are *not* new. We have, I think, already been given one reason to think that at least Badiou's materialism is not all that new given the problematic closeness between his more recent thought and a certain kind of (idealist) structuralism. I want, in light of this, to look at the relation between this brand of materialism as it appears in both Badiou and Žižek and a certain reading of Durkheim.

I have had occasion to bring Durkheim up before in this study via Althusser's attempt to distance himself from the structuralism of Levi-Strauss and his followers insofar as he attributes the imposition of the Durkheimian conception of a "collective consciousness" to certain elements of the structuralist enterprise.¹ Further, this criticism was used in chapter 4, as a backdrop for extending the complaints leveled at Badiou's theory by Johnston and Osborn.² It is not a coincidence that Althusser raises the Durkheimian claims in relation to Levi-Strauss—as was also noted in chapter 2—both Althusser and Levi-Strauss were well versed in Durkheim; so well, in fact, that the latter was a member of the famous *Collège de sociologie* along with many other French intellectuals around at the time, including, importantly for us, Sartre.³

As is well known, the *Collège* was not itself affiliated with 'official' university life but was, rather, a collection of intellectuals and artists that met in

Parisian cafés between 1937 and 1939. Its primary aim was to undertake an analysis of society which looked critically at the roles and relations between power, the religious, the social order, mythology, and the like. These investigations were founded on Durkheim's own analysis of these topics in his analysis of the relations between society and the religious as found mostly in his *The Elementary Forms of the Religious Life*.⁴ Before I say more about the influence of the *Collège*, I should say a bit more about Durkheim's own social analysis.

As we saw in chapter 2, Durkheim argues that to understand social existence one could not simply look to the subjective viewpoint of individuals but had to understand the conceptual rules and laws that govern what he calls the "collective consciousness" as it is these that are determining factors (in part anyway, as combined with individual consciousness) for the forms of consciousness that individuals in a given society have. These rules and laws are not themselves coextensive with collective consciousness, but they inform and undergird its particular historical manifestations insofar as they are the categories through which individual societies understand themselves and organize their worlds.

As Durkheim understands it, the change in manifestations of collective consciousness—that is, the existence of historically shifting and differing social structures and organizations—can be at least partially accounted for by making sense of the different ways in which these rules and laws get combined in different societies in history; however, as Stephen Turner notes, "there is a limit to such explanations. They do not allow for genuine moral and religious novelty" as merely recombining pre-existing formal categories leaves out the possibility of the 'new.' This is a problem that Durkheim was aware of, and he offers, as Turner points out, the category of "Collective effervescence [in order to] fill this gap."⁵

The concept of collective effervescence is described by Durkheim as a moment found in collective ritualized religious practice, in which the normally experienced 'profane' world of egoistic individuation is shed and a new collective consciousness and set of collective representations is forged. Here is Durkheim explaining the experience of the individual in the moment of such an effervescence, as a moment in which

. . . A man does not recognize himself any longer. Feeling himself dominated and carried away by some sort of an external power which makes him think and act differently than in normal times, he naturally has the impression of being himself no longer . . .⁶

As Frank Pearce points out, in the hands of the members of the *Collège*, Durkheim's thought in this regard was radicalized in a variety of ways,⁷ not the least of which was the interpretation given to Durkheim's conception of social (and individual) transformation via the concept of a 'collective effervescence' and the distinction between the 'sacred' and the 'profane.' Before

turning to this radicalization, however, we need to further understand the work these concepts do for Durkheim.

The ‘profane’ world is, for Durkheim, the normally experienced world of everyday existence. This world is characterized by individuation—that is, we are only barely (if at all) cognizant of our connection to others or to the larger community—and things run along as they regularly do, in a kind of mundane fashion. As Durkheim puts it in profane existence, “daily life drags wearily along.”⁸ The profane self, much like Badiou’s pre-evental self and Žižek’s ideological subject, is directly tied to this world as it is this world in which the profane self arises. This is to say that the profane self is a product of this world of individuation and regularity. Here again is Durkheim:

. . . We cling to the profane world with all the fibers of our sensual being—our very life depends on it. Not only is it the natural theatre of our activity, it penetrates us from every direction; it is part of us. We cannot then detach ourselves from it without doing violence to our nature—without offending our instincts.⁹

The effervescent moment, as noted above, is a moment that breaks with the profane everyday existence. It is the bridge that moves the individual from the realm of the ‘profane’ to that of the ‘sacred.’ Here, Durkheim argues, even in moments that seemingly have nothing to do with the religious, there are present all of the marks of the individual being transformed and carried away from himself (his profane self that is) and connected to others in ways that he isn’t in the quotidian world. Speaking of these moments historically, and echoing the quotation above regarding the complete destruction of the profane self in the moment of effervescence, Durkheim writes:

In certain historical periods, under the influence of some great communal upheaval, social interactions become more frequent and more active. Individuals seek each other out and assemble more often. The result is a general effervescence characteristic of revolutionary or creative epochs. Now this hyperactivity has the effect of generally stimulating individual energies. People live differently and more intensely than in normal times. *The changes are not only of nuance and degree, man himself becomes other.*¹⁰

It is this ‘becoming other’ that is, again, important for our purposes. The effervescent moment *remakes* the one who experiences it. He is, as Durkheim claims, no longer the profane individual but is instead something entirely different, entirely ‘other.’ It is here that the *College’s* radicalization of Durkheim’s conception of social (and individual) transformation via the concept of a ‘collective effervescence’ becomes important. For Durkheim, the distinction between the ‘sacred’ and the ‘profane’ signified the distinction between “phenomena or categorizations that are homogeneous

internally but heterogeneous to each other.”¹¹ That is to say, within Durkheim’s theory these two categories, while heterogeneous in relation to one another, remain part of one homogeneous social order. In the hands of the *Collège*, however,—and Pearce cites Bataille’s and Caillois’ reading of this—this became, for Bataille, “a distinction between the heterogeneous and the homogeneous” as such, and for Caillois, a distinction couched in temporal terms.¹² Here is Pearce’s description of Caillois’ view:

For Caillois . . . The Sacred is a key element both in ordinary life and in the festivals found in primitive societies (and to a much attenuated degree in contemporary societies) . . . Ordinary life tends to be regular, busy, safe, and sclerotic. ‘Time is wearing and exhausting’ and there is a need for social regeneration. This is made possible by the popular frenzy of the festival. It releases an active sacred energy, reverses the normal course of time and forms the social order . . .¹³

Thinking about the linkage between Durkheim and the members of the *Collège* especially in relation to comments made here about the transformations and radicalizations of the Durkheimian edifice it is hard not see this in the background, regardless of intention, of both Badiou’s and Žižek’s theoretical projects. There is here (in Durkheim as reconstructed by the *Collège*) two ‘temporalities’ defined by stasis (the profane) and change (the sacred, as emerging in collective effervescence in which the individuation of profane existence is shed in favor of a collectively grounded event/act). Looking at the overall structure of the Durkheimian claims in relation to Badiou we can see that the conception of the profane maps on quite nicely to Badiou’s conception of the intra-worldly structure of the counted-as-one logic of objects and individuals.

The profane world is certainly analogous to the Badiouan pre-evental world, in which all things are in their place, any inconsistencies are subtracted, and things run along in a mundane fashion. It is the individuation inherent to both accounts that is key for seeing the similarities—Remember here that Badiou builds his view of this out of and in relation to both Althusser and Sartre. Thinking again about our discussion of the Sartrean conception of the group-in-fusion that Badiou appropriates in theorizing the event, and knowing of Sartre’s participation in the *Collège*, it is hard not to speculate as to the influence of the Durkheimian theory (as interpreted by the *Collège*) on Sartre’s work in this regard, and its being filtered through Sartre and into Badiou.

Furthermore, the formal structures of collective consciousness in Durkheim, as noted in chapter 4, stand outside the world of subjective consciousness but are the formal backdrop through which individuals come to consciousness of themselves and the world. In this way, Durkheim’s formal structures of collective consciousness can be seen as analogous to Badiou’s conception of the count-as-one. It is hard not to see, in light of this, Badiou’s theory as precisely

not new and, rather, a kind of materialist neo-Durkheimianism (even if it is unaware of this and is the unconscious inheritor of this via the *Collège*).

Durkheim's own comments regarding the experience of collective effervescence also certainly echo the Žižekian theory of the act wherein the quotidian self is shed in favor of a new possibility that stands outside the individuation that is imposed on it by the conjuncture—and the subject's own active positing of the roles and conditions conjuncture in its reflexive redeployment of them (as described in chapter 6)—allowing the subject to view itself as a part of the universal (negative/real) rather than the particular (determined/quotidian). To be sure, in bringing this up, I am not necessarily interested in making wildly speculative claims about intellectual influence, but rather, simply want to point out not only the historical lineage but also the translation and transposition of some theoretical components from one theory into the next (as we have been doing throughout much of this study) and that the questions and methods that ground the respective projects of both Badiou and Žižek (and their relation to Althusser) should not and cannot be taken to be entirely new.

Further, in relation to the Althusserian conception of a Marxian philosophy (as founded in the break with Hegel/Feuerbach), both Badiou and Žižek retain this understanding of Marx which is, I think, ultimately the correct way of understanding Marx. And, both Badiou and Žižek, in reading and commenting on the other thinkers with whom they are occupied, offer us the same kinds of compelling and deep readings that Althusser does of Marx. So here, not only is what they do not simply 'new,' but it is instead, a correction of the record when it comes to these thinkers. In this sense, what all three of these thinkers are is, at least in part, simply exceptionally good readers of Marx and the other philosophers with which they are engaged.

We can, however, qualify this rejection of the title of 'new' by pointing out that what is new in these theories are the ways in which they rethink the categories and concepts that they analyze and inherit. Furthermore, we might argue that, for both Badiou and Žižek, what is new in their materialism is the newness found in the rebirth of the old claim to universalism, but here encountered in a new form—as appearing within existence (and not as external to it). Here again the Durkheimian conception of the 'sacred' is relevant, as whatever is 'sacred,' and hence collective, *appears* materially in effervescent moments, and it becomes a matter of figuring out how to sustain those moments. As Badiou puts it at the end of *Logics of Worlds*, "But I need neither God, nor the divine. I believe that it is here and now that we arouse or resurrect ourselves as Immortals."¹⁴

NOTES

1. See chapter 2.
2. See chapter 4.

3. Alexander T. Riley, "Renegade Durkheimianism and the Transgressive Left Sacred" in *The Cambridge Companion to Durkheim*, edited by Jeffrey C. Alexander and Philip Smith (Cambridge and New York: Cambridge University Press, 2005), 290.
4. See Emile Durkheim, *The Elementary Forms of Religious Life*, translated by Joseph Ward Swain (New York: Free Press, 1968).
5. Stephen Turner, "Introduction" in *Emile Durkheim: Sociologist and Moralist*, edited by Stephen Turner, (New York and London: Routledge, 1993), 7.
6. Durkheim, *Elementary Forms*, 249.
7. Frank Pearce, "Introduction: The Collège de Sociologie and French Social Thought" in *Economy and Society*, Vol. 45, No. 3 (2002), 1–6.
8. Durkheim, *Elementary Forms*, 250.
9. *Ibid.*, 231.
10. *Ibid.*, 158 (my emphasis).
11. *Ibid.*
12. *Ibid.*
13. *Ibid.*
14. Badiou, *Logics of Worlds*, translated by Alberto Toscano (London and New York: Continuum, 2009), 513.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Badiou, Alain. *Logics of Worlds*. Translated by Alberto Toscano. London and New York: Continuum, 2009.
- Durkheim, Emile. *The Elementary Forms of Religious Life*. Translated by Joseph Ward Swain. New York: Free Press, 1968.
- Pearce, Frank. "Introduction: The Collège de Sociologie and French Social Thought" in *Economy and Society*. Vol. 45, No. 3 (2002). 1–6.
- Riley, Alexander T. "Renegade Durkheimianism and the Transgressive Left Sacred" in *The Cambridge Companion to Durkheim*. Edited by Jeffrey C. Alexander and Philip Smith. Cambridge and New York: Cambridge University Press, 2005.
- Turner, Stephen. "Introduction" in *Emile Durkheim: Sociologist and Moralist*. Edited by Stephen Turner, New York and London: Routledge, 1993. 1–22.

Index

- Adereth, Max 10
- Althusser Louis 45, 54, 75, 77, 88, 103, 109, 114, 118; anti-humanism and 14–16, 26–9, 67; contingency in 6; critique of idealism 6–7; epistemological break 27–9; Hegel in 43–5; history in 42–5; humanist Marxism 9, 16; Ideology critique in 9, 15, 27, 29–38, 66, 77; materialism in 5–7, 15, 129–30; on Levi-Strauss 39–43; on Marx 15–16, 26–31, 35; on philosophy 9; on Spinoza 28, 29, 38, 46–8; Structuralism 6, 7, 38–40
- Aragon, Louis 11, 13
- Bachelard, Gaston 17–19, 39, 100; Althusser and 26–8; epistemological break in 16–19, 27, 53; on scientific practice 19
- Badiou, Alain 5, 28, 52, 75, 111, 114; Althusser and 54–7, 75; *Being and Event* 59, 60, 83, 87–8; Deleuze and 80–1; event 52–4, 59, 76–7, 122–4; French Revolution 70–1; Lacan and 75, 81, 82; *Logic of Worlds* 63–8, 80, 86–8; Mao/Maoism in 57–8, 69, 89; Marx and 52, 57–9; materialism and 5–7, 54–7, 64, 80–1, 83–90; mathematics as ontology 60–8; Saint Paul 53–4; Sartre and 77–80; Structuralism and 67–8; *Theory of Contradiction* 56; *Theory of the Subject* 57, 68, 75
- Balibar, Etienne 38, 119–20
- Bataille, Georges 136
- Bernstein, Eduard 2–3
- Bosteels, Bruno 56, 89
- Caillois, Roger 126
- Camus, Albert 14
- Canguilhem, Georges 45–6
- Cantor, Georg 60–2; Continuum Hypothesis in 61–3, 68
- Casanova, Laurent 12, 13
- Champenois, Jean 13
- Cogniot, Georges 13
- Cohen, G. A. 3–5; and Analytical Marxism 3; base/superstructure in 3; functionalism in 3–4; on history 3–4
- Collège de sociologie* 133–4
- Comte, Auguste 17–18
- Consciousness: Althusser on 29–31, 34–6; collective 41, 133–6; Hegel on 93–6
- Deleuze, Gilles 80, 81, 110
- Derrida, Jacques 9
- Desanti, Jean-Toussaint 13, 21
- Dialectical Materialism: Althusser on 54; Badiou on 54–7; Lecourt on 12
- Durkheim, Emile 41, 133; collective consciousness in 41, 133–6; collective effervescence in 134–6
- Eyers, Tom 106
- Frankfurt School 3–4, 26
- French Communist Party: Althusser and 20–2, 28, 47–8; and the Cominform 10–13; de-Stalinization of 14; humanist

- Marxism in 26; Lysenkoism in 13–15; Stalinism 10–14
- Freud, Sigmund 101
- Fromm, Eric 26
- Gaurady, Roger 11, 21; on existentialism 11
- Hamza, Agon 129
- Hegel, G. W. F. 1, 93–7, 102, 108, 126–7; history in 43–5, 96; idealism 1–2; Kant in 96; *Phenomenology of Spirit* 93, 94, 126; *Science of Logic* 95
- Historical Materialism: Althusser on 54; Badiou on 54–7
- Horkheimer, Max 4, 5
- idealism 2, 5–7, 44, 48, 77, 83–4, 87–9
- ideology critique: Althusser and 9, 15, 27, 29–38, 66, 77; Badiou and 55, 66, 80; Žižek and 110
- interpellation 36–8, 66, 67, 77, 103–4, 109, 115, 122, 129
- Johnston, Adrian 52, 71, 84–9, 107, 122, 123, 133
- Kant, Immanuel 64, 65, 89, 95–6, 98, 110
- Lacan, Jacques 7; Badiou on 75, 81–2; big Other 103, 109–10; Freud and 101–2; Language 101–2, 120; materialism in 106–7; Symbolic Order 101, 104–5; the Real 104–5; Žižek and 104, 105–7, 114–15, 120–23
- Lecourt, Dominique 12
- Levi-Strauss, Claude 39–42, 44, 46, 67, 83
- Lewis, William 20, 27
- Lysenko, Trofim 12, 14; rejection of Mendelianism 12–13
- Macherey, Pierre 38, 45–7
- Mao, Zedong 57–9, 75, 89
- Marx, Karl: 1, 3, 5; abstraction in 118–19; Althusser and 15–16, 26–31, 35; Badiou and 52, 57–9; commodity fetishism in 116–18; *Eighteenth Brumaire of Louis Bonaparte* 116, 120; history in 3–4; materialism 1–3; *Theses on Feuerbach* 15; Žižek and 116, 120–2
- materialism 1–3, 133; Althusser and 5–7, 29–38; Badiou and 81, 84; dialectical and historical 54–6; Levi-Strauss and 40; Marx and 1–3; Sartre and 79; Žižek and 105–8, 114
- Osborn, Peter 83, 84, 133
- Pearce, Frank 134
- Power, Nina 78–80
- Sartre, Jean Paul 54, 75, 133; *Critique of Dialectical Reason* 78–80; group-in-fusion in 78–9
- Sohn-Rethel, Alfred 117–19
- Spinoza, Baruch 28, 31–8, 47
- Structuralism 38–43, 46, 67–8, 75, 77, 81, 83–4, 133
- Thorez, Maurice 13, 21
- Toscano, Alberto 119
- Turner, Stephen 41–2, 134
- Wright, Colin 56–7, 89
- Zhdanov, Andrei 10, 14
- Zhdanovism 10, 19; Althusser on 20–1; two cultures view 10–11
- Žižek, Slavoj 3, 5, 28, 82; absolute knowing and 99; act 122–4, 128, 129; Bartleby politics 124–9; commodity fetishism 116, 120; Hegel and 97–101, 105–10, 114; Lacan in 104, 105–7, 114–15, 120–3; materialism 5–7, 93, 105–8, 114; Marx/Marxism in 116, 120–2